This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world’s books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that’s often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book’s long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ Make non-commercial use of the files We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ Refrain from automated querying Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google’s system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ Maintain attribution The Google “watermark” you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ Keep it legal Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can’t offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book’s appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google’s mission is to organize the world’s information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world’s books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at http://books.google.com/
RECORDS OF THE
LIFE OF JESUS
Books by
H. B. SHARMAN

JESUS AS TEACHER
Harper & Brothers

STUDIES IN JESUS AS TEACHER
Harper & Brothers

RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS
Harper & Brothers

STUDIES IN THE RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS
Harper & Brothers

THE TEACHING OF JESUS ABOUT THE FUTURE
University of Chicago Press

JESUS IN THE RECORDS
Association Press

THE SON OF MAN
Harper & Brothers
RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

Book I: The Record of Mt-Mk-Lk
Book II: The Record of John

By
HENRY BURTON SHARMAN, PH.D.
Honorary Lecturer in the Department of History
Yenching University, Peking, China

HARPER & BROTHERS PUBLISHERS
NEW YORK AND LONDON
RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

THE PURPOSE

The purpose of the book is to present the records of the life of Jesus in that form which will make most fully available the contributions of the several sources, both individual and collective, to an understanding of the actual career of Jesus. It has been the aim so to set forth the material as to provide primarily for an historical rather than a critical knowledge of the records. Stated in another way, the foremost intention has been to produce, in the language and in the order of the original records, a Life of Jesus. But it is thought also that, in the pursuance of that aim, the literary phenomena of the records have been so exhibited as to provide the basis for somewhat thorough critical study of the source relationships of these records.

THE METHOD

At no point throughout the work has any theory or hypothesis as to any literary or other relation of these records to one another had any part in the determination of the arrangement or the showing forth of the material. Mark is placed in the order of Mark; Luke is placed in the order of Luke, and John in its own order. In the case of Matthew only has any departure in order been made, and there for three chapters only (8–9–10) of the twenty-eight of that record. The departure made in that case was not based on any theory as to the source relations of the records, but resulted simply from the decision to conform Matthew in these chapters (8–9–10), as Matthew of itself is conformed throughout the rest of its structure, to that order of events on which Mark and Luke are in complete agreement. It will be evident, therefore, that not only has no theory of the relations of these records had any place in the work but also that the book cannot be regarded as a harmony of the records.

THE FORM

Those portions of the text that appear in roman type represent each record in its own chronological order, except that chapters 8–9–10 of Matthew, though in roman type, are not in the Matthew order,¹ but are conformed to the order of Mark-Luke. Those portions of the text that appear in italic type are not in the sequence of the records from which they come, but are placed where they stand in order that they may be studied there in relation to the record that does stand chronologically at that point. If, therefore, the reader will pass over what stands in italic type, the book may be used for the independent consecutive study of any one of the four individual records.²

¹ It should be observed that even within these chapters the Matthew order of events corresponds in considerable measure to that of Mark-Luke, for example, the consecution of §§ 50–52 and of §§ 29–31.
² In the case of the apparent (though not real) confusion in the Matthew order resulting from the conforming of Matthew 8–9–10 to the order of Mark-Luke, guidance is given by indicating in parts of Matthew the place of the succeeding portion by means of the notation (§ § 26) and the like at the end of the section, and for backward reference (§ § 23+) and the like at the head of the section.
THE FEATURES

It has been the intention throughout to show on each page all related material from all parts of the records—either by direct parallelism or by attached references to footnotes. When the related material has chronological agreement, all the reports stand in parallelism in roman type. When the relation is one of event or of thought only and not also of chronology, the report out of its own chronological order stands in parallelism in italic type, with a cross-reference to the section where it may be found in its own order and therefore in roman type. When the related material from distant places in the records has such bond with, or relationship in, those other places as cannot be properly or adequately shown by immediate parallelism, these related portions are set forth as attached footnotes. It should be true, therefore, that on any page of the book one may find the account of every occurrence within the records of those events or sayings that appear on that page—subject only to the general reservation that in the record of Matt-Mark-Luke no references forward are given to the record of John,¹ though every effort has been made to give completeness to the references that are shown throughout John to the related material in Matt-Mark-Luke.

THE SUBDIVISIONS

The subdivisions of the paragraphs,² made by the simple expedient of opening the text without any change of form or order, have been determined (a) by what it was thought would best contribute to comparative study and to ease of cross-reference, and (b) by what seemed the natural subdivisions of the thought. In general, the former consideration controlled the subdivisions in Matt-Mark-Luke; while in much of John, where cross-references and comparisons are fewer, the subdivisions of paragraphs were made with the purpose of possibly facilitating at some points the grasp and memory of the complex thought.

THE ORDER

It has been believed that the clearest and soundest results could not be reached, in any serious effort to understand Jesus, by an endeavor to reconstruct the history through the direct combination of the record of Matt-Mark-Luke with the record of John. Rather it has been thought that one should first be enabled to acquire the contributions of Matt-Mark-Luke, without taking any account of the chronological or other elements of John—not necessarily because of any judgment as to the relative historical worth of these sources, but solely on the basis of the fundamental difference in the method of their approach to the theme. When one has attained some adequate knowledge of the record of Matt-Mark-Luke, the immeasurable values in the record of John will be both better understood and more justly used in coming to the fulness of the knowledge of the stature of Jesus.

Easter, 1917

¹ The references forward from the record of Mt-Mk-Lk to the record of John are shown completely and in order on page 235.

² The paragraphing of the text in roman type does not depart from the Revised Version of 1881, except that not always (though usually) does that version show a paragraph where this book begins a section and therefore starts another paragraph.
RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

BOOK I: THE RECORD OF MT-MK-LK

CHAPTER I

STATEMENTS ABOUT ORIGINS

§ 1 Origin of the Records
§ 2 The Genealogy of Jesus
§ 3 Forecast to the Father of John
§ 4 Forecast to the Mother of Jesus
§ 5 Forecast by the Mother of John
§ 6 Forecast to Joseph of Nazareth

CHAPTER II

EARLY LIFE OF JOHN AND OF JESUS

§ 7 Birth of John the Baptist
§ 8 Birth of Jesus at Bethlehem
§ 9 Thanksgivings for the Birth of Jesus
§ 10 The Dedication at Jerusalem
§ 11 Jesus as King of the Jews
§ 12 Roman Rule in Relation to Jesus
§ 13 The Youth of John
§ 14 The Youth of Jesus
§ 15 Jesus the Youth at Jerusalem
§ 16 Development of Jesus

CHAPTER III

ACTIVITY OF JOHN AND ITS RELATION TO JESUS

§ 17 Statement of the Work of John
§ 18 The Baptism of Jesus by John
§ 19 The Genealogy of Jesus
§ 20 Withdrawal of Jesus to the Wilderness

CHAPTER IV

BEGINNINGS OF THE PUBLIC ACTIVITY OF JESUS

§ 21 General Statement of the Work of Jesus
§ 22 Jesus Begins at Nazareth
§ 23 Jesus Wins Fisherman Followers
§ 24 Early Popular Opinions about Jesus
§ 25 The Healing Power of Jesus
§ 26 Jesus Teaches throughout Galilee
§ 27 Jesus Wins Fisherman Followers
§ 28 Growth in Fame of Jesus
CHAPTER V

DEVELOPMENT OF OPPOSITION TO JESUS

§ 29 Criticism of Free Forgiveness for Sin
§ 30 Criticism for Association with Sinners
§ 31 Criticism of Attitude toward Fasting
§ 32 Criticism for Working on the Sabbath
§ 33 Criticism of Healing on the Sabbath

CHAPTER VI

DEFINITION OF STANDARDS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS BY JESUS

§ 34 Widespread Fame of Jesus
§ 35 Appointment of Twelve Associates
§ 36 Discourse on Standards of Righteousness
§ 37 Discourse on Standards of Righteousness
§ 38 Discourse on Standards of Righteousness

CHAPTER VII

CONTEMPORARY OPINIONS ABOUT THE WORTH OF JESUS

§ 39 Opinion of a Roman Centurion
§ 40 Opinion of the Common People
§ 41 Opinion of John the Baptist
§ 42 Opinion of a Sinner vs Opinion of a Pharisee
§ 43 On a Tour in Galilee
§ 44 Opinion of the Friends of Jesus
§ 45 Opinion of the Religious Leaders

CHAPTER VIII

THE MYSTERY OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD

§ 46 Basis of Real Relationship to Jesus
§ 47 Discourse on the Kingdom of God
§ 48 Discourse on the Kingdom of God
§ 49 Basis of Real Relationship to Jesus

CHAPTER IX

THE PLACE OF FAITH IN THE WORK OF JESUS

§ 50 “Have Ye Not Yet Faith?”
§ 51 Attitude of the Gerasenes
§ 52 “Fear Not, Only Believe”
§ 53 “Believe Ye That I Am Able?”
§ 54 “Because of Their Unbelief”
CHAPTER X
TOUR OF THE DISCIPLES AND RESULTANT EVENTS

§ 55 Jesus Tours in Galilee
§ 56 Discourse on the Mission of the Disciples
§ 57 Discourse on the Mission of the Disciples
§ 58 Fate of John the Baptist
§ 59 Report of Associates on Their Tour
§ 60 Teaching and Feeding the Multitude
§ 61 Across the Sea of Galilee
§ 62 Many Sick Brought to Jesus

CHAPTER XI
DEMAND BY PHARISEES FOR CONFORMITY AND CREDENTIALS

§ 63 Concerning Traditions about Defilement
§ 64 Withdrawal toward Tyre and Sidon
§ 65 Return Journey through Decapolis
§ 66 The Deaf and Dumb Man
§ 67 Healing and Feeding the Multitude
§ 68 Pharisees Demand Signs from Jesus
§ 69 The Leaven of the Pharisees
§ 70 The Blind Man of Bethsaida

CHAPTER XII
FORECASTS OF CONFLICT WITH THE JERUSALEM AUTHORITIES

§ 71 Opinion of Disciples about Jesus
§ 72 Jesus Foretells Events at Jerusalem
§ 73 Some Costs of Discipleship
§ 74 The Transfiguration of Jesus
§ 75 The Youth with the Dumb Spirit
§ 76 Jesus Repeats His Forecast of Events
§ 77 The Problem of Tribute Payment
§ 78 Discourse on Standards of Greatness

CHAPTER XIII
DEPARTURE FROM GALILEE FOR JERUSALEM

§ 79 General Statement of Journey
§ 80 Attitude of Samaritans toward Jesus
§ 81 Some Tests of Discipleship
§ 82 The Mission of the Disciples
§ 83 The Way of Eternal Life
§ 84 Many Things vs One Thing
§ 85 Elements of Prevailing Prayer
§ 86 A Charge of Alliance with Satan
§ 87 Basis of Real Relationship to Jesus
CHAPTER XIV

CONDEMNATION FOR OPPONENTS AND CONCERN FOR DISCIPLES

§ 88 Pharisees Demand Signs from Jesus
§ 89 The Use and Test of Truth
§ 90 Discourse on the Scribes and Pharisees
§ 91 Injunctions for the Future of the Disciples
§ 92 Teachings against Concern about Wealth
§ 93 Teachings against Anxiety about Food and Clothing
§ 94 Teachings about the Future

CHAPTER XV

DEEP FEELING AND DIRECT TEACHING

§ 95 Phases of the Mission of Jesus
§ 96 The Signs of the Times
§ 97 Warnings of Impending Fate
§ 98 Jesus Censured for Sabbath Healing
§ 99 Parables of the Kingdom of God
§ 100 Limits of the Kingdom of God
§ 101 Forecast of His Death by Jesus
§ 102 Again Censured for Sabbath Healing
§ 103 Teachings at the Table of a Pharisee
§ 104 The Costs of Discipleship

CHAPTER XVI

MANY TRUTHS TAUGHT IN PARABLES

§ 105 Parables on the Worth of Sinners
§ 106 Parable of the Steward
§ 107 Several Sayings of Jesus
§ 108 Parable of the Rich Man and the Beggar
§ 109 Several Sayings of Jesus
§ 110 Parable on Duty
§ 111 The Healing of the Lepers
§ 112 The Day of the Son of Man
§ 113 Parable of the Widow and the Judge
§ 114 Parable of the Publican and the Pharisee

CHAPTER XVII

TEACHING AND JOURNEYING ON TO JERUSALEM

§ 115 Teachings about Divorce
§ 116 Attitude of Jesus toward Children
§ 117 Relation of Riches to Eternal Life
§ 118 Parable of the Householder and the Labourers
§ 119 Jesus Forecasts Events at Jerusalem
§ 120 Teaching on Standards of Greatness
BOOK I: THE RECORD OF MT-MK-LK

§ 121 The Blind Beggar of Jericho
§ 122 The Rich Publican of Jericho
§ 123 Appearance of the Kingdom of God

CHAPTER XVIII
CHALLENGE OF THE JERUSALEM LEADERS BY JESUS

§ 124 Jesus Enters Jerusalem as a Popular Leader
§ 125 Jesus Returns to Jerusalem
§ 126 Jesus Casts Commerce from the Temple
§ 127 Faith as a Power

CHAPTER XIX
FINAL CONTEST OF JESUS WITH THE JEWISH RULERS

§ 128 Jewish Rulers Challenge the Authority of Jesus
§ 129 Parables in Condemnation of Jewish Leaders
§ 130 Efforts to Accumulate Evidence against Jesus
§ 131 The Problem of the Christ

CHAPTER XX
DISCOURSE IN CONDEMNATION OF Scribes AND PHARISEES

§ 132 Discourse in Condemnation of Scribes and Pharisees
§ 133 The True Test of Giving

CHAPTER XXI
DISCOURSE ON EVENTS OF THE FUTURE

§ 134 Discourse on Events of the Future
§ 135 Discourse on Events of the Future
§ 136 Discourse on Events of the Future
§ 137 Conspiracy for the Arrest of Jesus

CHAPTER XXII
FINAL HOURS OF JESUS WITH HIS DISCIPLES

§ 138 The Passover with the Disciples
§ 139 Withdrawal to the Mount of Olives
§ 140 At the Place Named Gethsemane
§ 141 The Betrayal and Arrest of Jesus

CHAPTER XXIII
JUDICIAL TRIALS AND CRUCIFIXION OF JESUS

§ 142 The Trial before the Jewish Authorities
§ 143 The Trial before the Roman Authorities
§ 144 The Crucifixion of Jesus
§ 145 The Burial of Jesus
CHAPTER XXIV

EVENTS SUBSEQUENT TO THE DEATH OF JESUS

§ 146 The Guard for the Sepulchre
§ 147 The Visit to the Sepulchre
§ 148 The Guard and the Authorities
§ 149 With the Disciples in the Country
§ 150 With the Disciples in Jerusalem
§ 151 With the Disciples in Galilee
BOOK II: THE RECORD OF JOHN

CHAPTER I

PROLOGUE TO THE RECORD OF JOHN

§ 152 Prologue to the Record of John

CHAPTER II

IN BETHANY BEYOND JORDAN

§ 153 Purpose of the Preaching of John
§ 154 Purpose of the Baptism by John
§ 155 Transition of Disciples from John to Jesus
§ 156 Jesus Wins Early Followers

CHAPTER III

IN THE PROVINCE OF GALILEE

§ 157 In Cana of Galilee
§ 158 At Capernaum in Galilee

CHAPTER IV

IN JERUSALEM AT THE PASSOVER

§ 159 Jesus Casts Commerce from the Temple
§ 160 Attitude in Jerusalem toward Jesus
§ 161 Discourse with a Jewish Teacher
§ 162 Mission of the Son of Man and Son of God

CHAPTER V

IN THE LAND OF JUĐÆA

§ 163 Baptism of the Disciples of Jesus
§ 164 Baptism of Disciples by John
§ 165 Relation of John to Jesus
§ 166 Relation of Truth to Source
§ 167 Departure from Judaea for Galilee

CHAPTER VI

IN THE PROVINCE OF SAMARIA

§ 168 Jesus Journeys to Sychar of Samaria
§ 169 Discourse with a Woman of Samaria
§ 170 Discourse with the Disciples
§ 171 Stay of Jesus in Samaria

xiii
RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

CHAPTER VII
IN THE PROVINCE OF GALILEE

§ 172 Attitude of Galilæans toward Jesus
§ 173 In Cana of Galilee

CHAPTER VIII
IN JERUSALEM AT A FEAST

§ 174 At the Pool of Bethesda
§ 175 Criticism for Activity on the Sabbath
§ 176 Discourse on Judgment and Life
§ 177 Witnesses to the Truth of Jesus

CHAPTER IX
ABOUT THE SEA OF GALILEE

§ 178 Teaching and Feeding the Multitude
§ 179 Popular Attitude toward Jesus
§ 180 Across the Sea of Galilee
§ 181 The Multitude in Capernaum
§ 182 Discourse on the Bread of Life
§ 183 Effect of the Discourse on Disciples
§ 184 Jesus in Galilee

CHAPTER X
AT THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES

§ 185 Opinions of the Brethren of Jesus
§ 186 Popular Opinions about Jesus
§ 187 Source of the Teaching of Jesus
§ 188 Concerning Healing on the Sabbath
§ 189 Conflicting Judgments about Jesus
§ 190 The Adulterous Woman and Her Accusers
§ 191 Discourse on the Light of Life
§ 192 The Identity of Jesus
§ 193 Discourse on Freedom through Truth

CHAPTER XI
AT THE FEAST OF THE DEDICATION

§ 194 The Blind Beggar of Jerusalem
§ 195 Controversy about the Beggar and Jesus
§ 196 True Sight and False Sight
§ 197 Discourse on the Sheep and the Shepherd
§ 198 Bases of a Charge of Blasphemy
BOOK II: THE RECORD OF JOHN

CHAPTER XII
IN THE REGION OF JERUSALEM

§ 199 Withdrawal to Bethany beyond Jordan
§ 200 Return to Bethany near Jerusalem
§ 201 Concerning Lazarus of Bethany
§ 202 Plots for the Death of Jesus
§ 203 Withdrawal of Jesus to Ephraim
§ 204 The Supper to Jesus at Bethany

CHAPTER XIII
CHALLENGE TO THE JERUSALEM LEADERS

§ 205 Jesus Enters Jerusalem as a Popular Leader
§ 206 Intimations of the Impending Death of Jesus
§ 207 Unbelief and Belief in Jesus
§ 208 The Source of the Truth in Jesus

CHAPTER XIV
FINAL HOURS WITH DISCIPLES

§ 209 The Passover with the Disciples
§ 210 Farewell Discourses of Jesus
§ 211 Farewell Discourses of Jesus
§ 212 Farewell Prayer of Jesus
§ 213 At the Place Named Gethsemane
§ 214 Betrayal and Arrest of Jesus

CHAPTER XV
JUDICIAL TRIALS AND CRUCIFIXION

§ 215 Trial before the Jewish Authorities
§ 216 Trial before the Roman Authorities
§ 217 The Crucifixion of Jesus
§ 218 The Burial of Jesus

CHAPTER XVI
SUBSEQUENT TO THE DEATH OF JESUS

§ 219 The Visits to the Sepulchre
§ 220 With the Disciples in Jerusalem
§ 221 Purpose of the Record of John
§ 222 With the Disciples at the Sea of Tiberias
§ 223 Conclusion of the Record of John

EXHIBIT OF THE RELATIONS BETWEEN THE RECORD OF Mt-Mk-Lk AND THE RECORD OF JOHN

LOCATION OF PASSAGES IN THE RECORDS
BOOK I

THE RECORD OF MT-MK-LK
RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

BOOK I

THE RECORD OF MT-MK-LK

Chapter I  Statements about Origins
Chapter II  Early Life of John and of Jesus
Chapter III Activity of John and Its Relation to Jesus
Chapter IV  Beginnings of the Public Activity of Jesus
Chapter V  Development of Opposition to Jesus
Chapter VI  Definition of Standards of Righteousness by Jesus
Chapter VII Contemporary Opinions about the Worth of Jesus
Chapter VIII The Mystery of the Kingdom of God
Chapter IX  The Place of Faith in the Work of Jesus
Chapter X  Tour of the Disciples and Resultant Events
Chapter XI  Demand by Pharisees for Conformity and Credentials
Chapter XII  Forecasts of Conflict with the Jerusalem Authorities
Chapter XIII  Departure from Galilee for Jerusalem
Chapter XIV  Condemnation for Opponents and Concern for Disciples
Chapter XV  Deep Feeling and Direct Teaching
Chapter XVI  Many Truths Taught in Parables
Chapter XVII Teaching and Journeying on to Jerusalem
Chapter XVIII Challenge of the Jerusalem Leaders by Jesus
Chapter XIX  Final Contest of Jesus with the Jewish Rulers
Chapter XX  Discourse in Condemnation of Scribes and Pharisees
Chapter XXI  Discourse on Events of the Future
Chapter XXII Final Hours of Jesus with His Disciples
Chapter XXIII Judicial Trials and Crucifixion of Jesus
Chapter XXIV Events Subsequent to the Death of Jesus
CHAPTER I

STATEMENTS ABOUT ORIGINS

§ 1 ORIGIN OF THE RECORDS

LUKE 1:1–4

Forasmuch as many have taken in hand to draw up a narrative concerning those matters which have been fulfilled among us, even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitnesses and ministers of the word, it seemed good to me also, having traced the course of all things accurately from the first, to write unto thee in order, most excellent Theophilius; that thou mightest know the certainty concerning the things wherein thou wast instructed.

§ 2 THE GENEALOGY OF JESUS

MATT 1:1–17

2 The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.

2 Abraham begat Isaac;
and Isaac begat Jacob;
and Jacob begat Judah and his brethren;
3 and Judah begat Perez and Zerah of Tamar;
and Perez begat Hezron;
and Hezron begat Ram;
4 and Ram begat Amminadab;
and Amminadab begat Nahshon;
and Nahshon begat Salmon;
5 and Salmon begat Boaz of Rahab;
and Boaz begat Obed of Ruth;
and Obed begat Jesse;
6 and Jesse begat David the king.

And David begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Uriah;
7 and Solomon begat Rehoboam;
and Rehoboam begat Abijah;
and Abijah begat Asa;
8 and Asa begat Jehoshaphat;
and Jehoshaphat begat Joram;
and Joram begat Uzziah;
9 and Uzziah begat Jotham;
and Jotham begat Ahaz;
and Ahaz begat Hezekiah;
10 and Hezekiah begat Manasseh;
and Manasseh begat Amon;
and Amon begat Josiah;

LUKE 3:23–38

23 And Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty years of age, being the son (as was supposed) of Joseph,
the son of Heli, the son of Levi,
the son of Melchi, the son of Levi,
the son of Jannai, the son of Joseph,
the son of Simeon, the son of Melea,
the son of Amos, the son of Nahum,
the son of Esli, the son of Naggai,
the son of Maath, the son of Matthaias,
the son of Semein, the son of Jesse,
the son of Jeda, the son of Amminadab,
the son of Rhesa, the son of Zerubbabel,
the son of Sheultiel, the son of Neri,
the son of Melchi, the son of Addi,
the son of Casm, the son of Isaac,
the son of Elmadam, the son of Abraham,
the son of Er, the son of Tera,
the son of Jesus, the son of Joses,
the son of Joseph, the son of Math, the son of Peleg,
§ 2 RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

Matt 1

11 And Josiah begat Jeconiah and his brethren, at the time of the carrying away to Babylon.

12 And after the carrying away to Babylon, Jeconiah begat Shealtiel; and Shealtiel begat Zerubbabel;
and Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim;
and Eliakim begat Azor; and Azor begat Sadoc;
and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud;
and Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthew;
and Matthew begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.

Luke 3

the son of Eber,
the son of Shela,
the son of Cainan,
the son of Arphaxad,
the son of Shem,
the son of Noah,
the son of Lamech,
the son of methuselah,
the son of Enoch,

11 And the son of Jared, the son of Mahalaleel, the son of Cainan, the son of Enos, the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God.

§ 3 FORECAST TO THE FATHER OF JOHN

Matthew

A In the days of Herod the king. (§ 11.4) = 2:1

Luke 1:5-25

A There was in the days of Herod, king of Judea, a certain priest named Zacharias, of the course of Abijah; and he had a wife of the daughters of Aaron, and her name was Elisabeth. And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameless. And they had no child, because that Elisabeth was barren, and they both were now well stricken in years.

B Now it came to pass, while he executed the priest’s office before God in the order of his course, according to the custom of the priest’s office, his lot was to enter into the temple of the Lord and burn incense. And the whole multitude of the people were praying without at the hour of incense.

C And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord standing on the right side of the altar of incense. And Zacharias was troubled when he saw him, and fear fell upon him. But the angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: because thy supplication is heard, and thy wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John.

D And thou shalt have joy and gladness; and many shall rejoice at his birth. For he shall be great in the sight of the Lord, and he shall drink no wine nor strong drink; and he shall be filled with the Holy Ghost, even from his mother’s womb. And many of the children of Israel

ERV margin: 1 Or removal to Babylon 2 Greek Salathiel 3 Greek advanced in their days 4 Or sanctuary
5 Greek sikera 6 Or Holy Spirit; and so throughout this book

OT references: Lk 3:16-38 = 1 Chronicles 1:1-4 Lk 1:15 = 1 Chronicles 24:10 Lk 1:15 = Numbers 6:5 and Judges 13:4-5

4
LUKE I

shall he turn unto the Lord their God. And he shall go before his face in the spirit and power of Elijah, to turn the hearts of the fathers to the children, and the disobedient to walk in the wisdom of the just; to make ready for the Lord a people prepared for him.

E And Zacharias said unto the angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife is well stricken in years. And the angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the presence of God; and I was sent to speak unto thee, and to bring thee these good tidings. And behold, thou shalt be silent and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall come to pass, because thou believestst not my words, which shall be fulfilled in their season.

F And the people were waiting for Zacharias, and they marvelled while he tarried in the temple. And when he came out, he could not speak unto them: and they perceived that he had seen a vision in the temple: and he continued making signs unto them, and remained dumb. And it came to pass, when the days of his ministration were fulfilled, he departed unto his house.

G And after these days Elisabeth his wife conceived; and she hid herself five months, saying, Thus hath the Lord done unto me in the days wherein he looked upon me, to take away my reproach among men.

§ 4 FORECAST TO THE MOTHER OF JESUS

MATTHEW

A Mary had been betrothed to Joseph. (§ 6 A) = 1:18

Joseph, thou son of David. (§ 6 B) = 1:20

B And she shall bring forth a son; and thou shalt call his name Jesus. (§ 6 C) = 2:1

C Where is he that is born King of the Jews? (§ 6 D) = 2:2

D She was found with child of the Holy Ghost. (§ 6 E) = 1:18

That which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. (§ 6 F) = 1:20

LUKE 1:26–38

A Now in the sixth month the angel Gabriel was sent from God unto a city of Galilee, named Nazareth, to a virgin betrothed to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin’s name was Mary. And he came in unto her, and said, Hail, thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee. But she was greatly troubled at the saying, and cast in her mind what manner of salutation this might be. And the angel said unto her, Fear not, Mary: for thou hast found favour with God.

B And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus.

C He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Most High: and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: and he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.

D And Mary said unto the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? And the angel answered and said unto her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the
LUKE I

power of the Most High shall overshadow thee: wherefore also is that which is to be born shall be called holy, the Son of God.

And behold, Elisabeth thy kinswoman, she also hath conceived a son in her old age: and this is the sixth month with her that was called barren. For no word from God shall be void of power. And Mary said, Behold, the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

§ 5 FORECAST BY THE MOTHER OF JOHN

LUKE 1:39-56

A And Mary arose in these days and went into the hill country with haste, into a city of Judah; and entered into the house of Zacharias and saluted Elisabeth. And it came to pass, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost; and she lifted up her voice with a loud cry, and said,

B Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb. And whence is this to me, that the mother of my Lord should come unto me? For behold, when the voice of thy salutation came into mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. And blessed is she that believed; for there shall be a fulfilment of the things which have been spoken to her from the Lord.

C Mary said,
My soul doth magnify the Lord,
And my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.
For he hath looked upon the low estate of his handmaiden:
For behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.
For he that is mighty hath done to me great things;
And holy is his name.
And his mercy is unto generations and generations:
On them that fear him.
He hath shewed strength with his arm; he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their heart.
He hath put down princes from their thrones, and hath exalted them of low degree.
The hungry he hath filled with good things; and the rich he hath sent empty away.
He hath holpen Israel his servant, that he might remember mercy
(As he spake unto our fathers)
Toward Abraham and his seed for ever.

D And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned unto her house.
§ 6 FORECAST TO JOSEPH OF NAZARETH

MATTHEW 1:18–25

A Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When his mother Mary had been betrothed to Joseph, before they came together she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. And Joseph her husband, being a righteous man, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privately.

B But when he thought on these things, behold, an angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost.

C And she shall bring forth a son; and thou shalt call his name Jesus; for it is he that shall save his people from their sins.

D Now all this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying,

Behold, the virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son,
And they shall call his name Immanuel; which is, being interpreted, God with us.

E And Joseph arose from his sleep, and did as the angel of the Lord commanded him, and took unto him his wife; and knew her not till she had brought forth a son: and he called his name Jesus.

LUKE

A A virgin betrothed to a man whose name was Joseph . . . and the virgin’s name was Mary. (§4A) = 1:27

Mary, who was betrothed to him. (§8B) = 2:5

Compare the passage from §4D under B below

B Joseph, of the house of David. (§4A) = 1:37

The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Most High shall overshadow thee: wherefore also that which is to be born shall be called holy, the Son of God. (§4D) = 1:35

C And behold, thou shalt conceive in thy womb, and bring forth a son, and shalt call his name Jesus. (§4D) = 1:31

D And she brought forth her firstborn son. (§6C) = 2:7

His name was called Jesus, which was so called by the angel. (§10A) = 2:21
CHAPTER II

EARLY LIFE OF JOHN AND OF JESUS

§ 7 BIRTH OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

LUKE 1:57-80

A Now Elisabeth's time was fulfilled that she should be delivered; and she brought forth a son. And her neighbours and her kinsfolk heard that the Lord had magnified his mercy towards her; and they rejoiced with her. And it came to pass on the eighth day, that they came to circumcise the child;

B and they would have called him Zacharias, after the name of his father. And his mother answered and said, Not so; but he shall be called John. And they said unto her, There is none of thy kindred that is called by this name. And they made signs to his father, what he would have him called. And he asked for a writing tablet, and wrote, saying, His name is John. And they marvelled all. And his mouth was opened immediately, and his tongue loosed, and he spake, blessing God.

C And fear came on all that dwelt round about them: and all these sayings were noise abroad throughout all the hill country of Judæa. And all that heard them laid them up in their heart, saying, What then shall this child be? For the hand of the Lord was with him.

D And his father Zacharias was filled with the Holy Ghost, and prophesied, saying, Blessed be the Lord, the God of Israel; For he hath visited and wrought redemption for his people, and hath raised up a horn of salvation for us in the house of his servant David (As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets which have been since the world began), Salvation from our enemies, and from the hand of all that hate us; To shew mercy towards our fathers, and to remember his holy covenant; The oath which he sware unto Abraham our father, To grant unto us that we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies Should serve him without fear, In holiness and righteousness before him all the days.

E With verse 76b, compare § 17 EF and § 41 E
With verse 77b, compare § 17 portion H

F Yea and thou, child, shalt be called the prophet of the Most High: For thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to make ready his ways; To give knowledge of salvation unto his people.

§ 7

RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

LUKE 1

In the remission of their sins,
Because of the tender mercy of our God,
Whereby the dayspring from on high shall visit us,
To shine upon them that sit in darkness and in the shadow of death;
To guide our feet into the way of peace.

And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his shewing unto Israel.

§ 8 BIRTH OF JESUS AT BETHLEHEM

MATTHEW

Luke 2:1–7

A Now it came to pass in those days, there went out a decree from Cæsar Augustus, that all the world should be enrolled. This was the first enrolment made when Quirinius was governor of Syria. And all went to enrol themselves, every one to his own city.

B And Joseph also went up from Galilee, out of the city of Nazareth, into Judæa, to the city of David, which is called Bethlehem, because he was of the house and family of David; to enrol himself with Mary, who was betrothed to him, being great with child.

C And it came to pass, while they were there, the days were fulfilled that she should be delivered. And she brought forth her firstborn son; and she wrapped him in swaddling clothes, and laid him in a manger, because there was no room for them in the inn.

§ 9 THANKSGIVINGS FOR THE BIRTH OF JESUS

Luke 2:8–20

A And there were shepherds in the same country abiding in the field, and keeping watch by night over their flock. And an angel of the Lord stood by them, and the glory of the Lord shone round about them: and they were sore afraid. And the angel said unto them, Be not afraid; for behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy which shall be to all the people: for there is born to you this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord. And this is the sign unto you: Ye shall find a babe wrapped in swaddling clothes, and lying in a manger.

B And suddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly host praising God, and saying,

Glory to God in the highest,
And on earth peace among men in whom he is well pleased.

C And it came to pass, when the angels went away from them into heaven, the shepherds said one to another, Let us go now even unto Bethlehem, and see this thing that is come to pass, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

ERV margin:
1 Or heart of mercy
2 Or Wherein
3 Many ancient authorities read hath visited us
4 Greek
5 Or night-watches
6 Or Anointed Lord
7 Many ancient authorities read peace, good pleasure
8 Greek
9 Or saying
10 Greek

OT references:
Lk 1:79 = Isaiah 9:2

10
LUKE 2
And they came with haste, and found both Mary and Joseph, and the babe lying in the manger.

D And when they saw it, they made known concerning the saying which was spoken to them about this child. And all that heard it wondered at the things which were spoken unto them by the shepherds. But Mary kept all these sayings, pondering them in her heart. And the shepherds returned, glorifying and praising God for all the things that they had heard and seen, even as it was spoken unto them.

§ 10 THE DEDICATION AT JERUSALEM

MATTHEW

A And he called his name Jesus. (§6E)=1:25

LUKE 2:21-39

A And when eight days were fulfilled for circumcision, his name was called Jesus, which was so called by the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

B And when the days of their purification according to the law of Moses were fulfilled, they brought him up to Jerusalem, to present him to the Lord (as it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord), and to offer a sacrifice according to that which is said in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons.

C And behold, there was a man in Jerusalem, whose name was Simeon; and this man was righteous and devout, looking for the consolation of Israel: and the Holy Spirit was upon him. And it had been revealed unto him by the Holy Spirit, that he should not see death, before he had seen the Lord's Christ. And he came in the Spirit into the temple: and when the parents brought in the child Jesus, that they might do concerning him after the custom of the law, then he received him into his arms, and blessed God, and said,

Now lettest thou thy servant depart, O Lord,
According to thy word, in peace;
For mine eyes have seen thy salvation,
Which thou hast prepared before the face of all peoples;
A light for revelation to the Gentiles,
And the glory of thy people Israel.
And his father and his mother were marvelling at the things which were spoken concerning him; and Simeon blessed them, and said unto Mary his mother, Behold, this child is set for the falling and rising up of many in Israel; and for a sign which is spoken against; yea and a sword shall pierce through thine own soul; that thoughts out of many hearts may be revealed.

D And there was one Anna, a prophetess, the daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Asher (she was of a great age, having lived with a hus-

ERV margin:
1 Or things
2 Greek bondservant
3 Greek Master
4 Or the uncovelling of the Gentiles

5 Greek advanced in many days

OT references:
Lk 2:21 = Genesis 17:12 and Leviticus 12:3
Lk 2:22-24 = Leviticus 12:2-6
Lk 2:25 = Exodus 13:2, 12, 15
Lk 2:30-32 = Isaiah 52:10
Lk 2:35-36 = Isaiah 42:6 and 49:6

11
§ 10

RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

§ 11 JESUS AS KING OF THE JEWS

LUKE 2

hand seven years from her virginity, and she had been a widow even for fourscore and four years), which departed not from the temple, worshipping with fastings and supplications night and day. And coming up at that very hour she gave thanks unto God, and spake of him to all them that were looking for the redemption of Jerusalem.

And when they had accomplished all things that were according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth.

MATT 2:1-12

A Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea in the days of Herod the king, behold, wise men from the east came to Jerusalem.

B saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we saw his star in the east, and are come to worship him.

C And when Herod the king heard it, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And gathering together all the chief priests and scribes of the people, he inquired of them where the Christ should be born. And they said unto him, In Bethlehem; for thus it is written by the prophet,

And thou Bethlehem, land of Judah,

Art in no wise least among the princes of Judah:

For out of thee shall come forth a governor,

Which shall be shepherd of my people Israel.

D Then Herod privily called the wise men, and learned of them carefully what time the star appeared. And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search out carefully concerning the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word, that I also may come and worship him.

E And they, having heard the king, went their way; and lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. And when they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. And they came into the house and saw the young child with Mary his mother; and they fell down and worshipped him; and opening their treasures they offered unto him gifts, gold and frankincense and myrrh.

F And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way.

ERV margin: 1 Greek Magi: compare Esther 1:13 and Daniel 2:12 2 Or Where is the King of the Jews that is born? 3 Greek unto the ages 4 Or through 5 Or the time of the star that appeared

OT references: Mt 2:2 = Numbers 24:17 Mt 2:6 = Micah 5:2 Lk 1:32-35 = 2 Samuel 7:12-17

12
§ 12 ROMAN RULE IN RELATION TO JESUS

Matt 2:13-23

A Now when they were departed, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I tell thee: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him. And he arose and took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt; and was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Lord through the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt did I call my son.

b Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the male children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the borders thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had carefully learned of the wise men. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying,

A voice was heard in Ramah, 18
Weeping and great mourning,
Rachel weeping for her children;
And she would not be comforted, because they are not.

c But when Herod was dead, behold, an angel of the Lord appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt, saying, Arise and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead that sought the young child’s life. And he arose and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel.

d But when he heard that Archelaus was reigning over Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither; and being warned of God in a dream, he withdrew into the parts of Galilee, and came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, that he should be called a Nazarene.

§ 13 THE YOUTH OF JOHN

Luke 1:80

And the child grew, and waxed strong in spirit, and was in the deserts till the day of his showing unto Israel. (§ F)

§ 14 THE YOUTH OF JESUS

Matt 2:22-23

But when he heard that Archelaus was reigning over Judea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither; and being warned of God in a dream, he withdrew into the parts of Galilee, and came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophets, that he should be called a Nazarene. (§ F)


And when they had accomplished all things that were according to the law of the Lord, they returned into Galilee, to their own city Nazareth. (§ F)

And the child grew, and waxed strong, filled with wisdom: and the grace of God was upon him.

ERV margin: 1 Greek Magi: compare Esther 1:13 and Daniel 2:12 2 Or through 3 Greek becoming full of wisdom

OT references: Mt 2:15 = Hosea 11:1 Mt 2:18 = Jeremiah 31:15 Mt 2:23 = Isaiah 11:1 (7)
§ 15 JESUS THE YOUTH AT JERUSALEM

LUKE 2:41-50
A And his parents went every year to Jerusalem at the feast of the passover. And when he was twelve years old, they went up after the custom of the feast; and when they had fulfilled the days, as they were returning, the boy Jesus tarried behind in Jerusalem; and his parents knew it not; but supposing him to be in the company, they went a day’s journey; and they sought for him among their kinsfolk and acquaintance: and when they found him not, they returned to Jerusalem, seeking for him.

B And it came to pass, after three days they found him in the temple, sitting in the midst of the doctors, both hearing them, and asking them questions: and all that heard him were amazed at his understanding and his answers. And when they saw him, they were astonished: and his mother said unto him, Son, why hast thou thus dealt with us? behold, thy father and I sought thee sorrowing. And he said unto them, How is it that ye sought me? wist ye not that I must be in my Father’s house? And they understood not the saying which he spake unto them.

§ 16 DEVELOPMENT OF JESUS

LUKE 2:51-52
And he went down with them, and came to Nazareth; and he was subject unto them: and his mother kept all these sayings in her heart. And Jesus advanced in wisdom and stature, and in favour with God and men.

ERV margin: 1 Or teachers 2 Greek Child 3 Or about my Father’s business: Greek in the things of my Father 4 Or things 5 Or age 6 Or grace

OT references: Lk 2:41 = Exodus 23:14-17 and Deuteronomy 15:1-8 Lk 2:52 = 1 Samuel 2:36
CHAPTER III

ACTIVITY OF JOHN AND ITS RELATION TO JESUS

§ 17 STATEMENT OF THE WORK OF JOHN

MATTHEW 3:1-12

A The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God.

MARK 1:1-8

C And in those days came John the Baptist, preaching in the wilderness of Judea, saying, Repent ye; for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

G Compare portion H below

MARK 1:1-8

D For this is he that was spoken of by the prophet, saying,

E Compare §41 portion E

F The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make ye ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight.

H Compare portion C above

LUKE 3:1-20

B Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Caesar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of the region of Iturea and Trachonitis, and Lysanias tetrarch of Abilene, in the high-priesthood of Annas and Caiaphas,

C The word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness. And he came into all the region round about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance unto remission of sins;

D as it is written in the book of the words of Isaiah the prophet,

E Compare §41 portion E

F The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make ye ready the way of the Lord, Make his paths straight.

G Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; And the crooked shall become straight,

H Compare portion C above

And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

ERV margin:
1 Some ancient authorities omit the Son of God
2 Or through
3 Some ancient authorities read in the prophets

OT references:
Mk 1:2 = Malachi 3:1
Mt 3:1 and Mk 1:3 and Lk 3:4 = Isaiah 40:3
Lk 3:5-6 = Isaiah 40:4-5

C With the saying of John in Matt 3:1, compare the saying of Jesus in §21 c (Mt)
G With Luke 3:3b of portion c, compare Matt 3:5b in portion j below
Matt 3
1 Now John himself had his raiment of camel’s hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his food was locusts and wild honey.

J
Then went out unto him Jerusalem, and all Judea, and all the region round about Jordan; and they were baptized of him in the river Jordan, confessing their sins.

K Compare portion I above

Mark 1
1 Compare portion K below

L But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees coming to his baptism, he said unto them,

M* Ye offspring of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruit worthy of repentance: and think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And even now is the axe laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

Luke 3

L He said therefore to the multitudes that went out to be baptized of him,

M* Ye offspring of vipers, who warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham. And even now is the axe also laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

N And the multitudes asked him, saying, What then must we do? And he answered and said unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath food, let him do likewise. And there came also publicans to be baptized, and they said unto him, Master, what must we do? And he said unto them, Extort no more than that which is appointed you. And soldiers also asked him, saying, And we, what must we do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither exact anything wrongfully; and be content with your wages.

O And as the people were in expectation, and all men reasoned in their hearts concern-
ACTIVITY OF JOHN AND ITS RELATION TO JESUS § 18

Matt 3

P  I in-15

deed baptize you with water unto repentance: but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:

Q  whose23

fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly cleanse his threshing-floor; and he will gather his wheat into the garner, but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.

R  Compare §58 portion D

Mark 1

P  And he preached, say-7

ing, There cometh after me he that is mightier than I, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose. I baptized you with water; but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

R  Compare §58 portion D

Luke 3

P  I indeed baptize you with water; but there cometh he that is mightier than I, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire:

Q  whose fan is in his hand,17

throughly to cleanse his threshing-floor, and to gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn up with unquenchable fire.

R  With many other exhorta-18

tions therefore preached he "good tidings unto the people; but Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his brother's wife, and for all the evil things which Herod had done, added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison.

§ 18 THE BAPTISM OF JESUS BY JOHN

Matt 3:13-17

A  Then cometh Jesus from
galilee to the jordan unto
John, to be baptized of him.

B  But John would have him

dered him, saying, I have need
to be baptized of thee, and
comest thou to me? But

Jesus answering said unto
him, Suffer "it now: for thus
it becometh us to fulfill all
righteousness. Then he suf-
fereth him.

C  And Jesus, when16

he was baptized, went up
straightway from the water:
and lo, the heavens were
opened unto him, and he saw
the Spirit of God descending
as a dove, and coming upon
him; and lo, a voice out of
the heavens, saying, "This is
my beloved Son, in whom I
am well pleased.

Mark 1:9-11

A  And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in the Jordan.

B  But John would have him14
dered him, saying, I have need
to be baptized of thee, and
comest thou to me? But

Jesus answering said unto
him, Suffer "it now: for thus
it becometh us to fulfill all
righteousness. Then he suf-
fereth him.

C  And straightway10

coming up out of the water,
he saw the heavens rent asunder,
and the Spirit as a dove descending upon him: and a12
voice came out of the heavens,

DP  Thou art my beloved Son,
in thee I am well pleased.


A  Now it came to pass, when27

all the people were baptized,
that, Jesus also having been
baptized,

B  But John would have him14
dered him, saying, I have need
to be baptized of thee, and
comest thou to me? But

Jesus answering said unto
him, Suffer "it now: for thus
it becometh us to fulfill all
righteousness. Then he suf-
fereth him.

C  And straightway10

coming up out of the water,
he saw the heavens rent asunder,
and the Spirit as a dove descending upon him: and a12
voice came out of the heavens,

DP  Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased.

ERV margins: 1 Or in 2 Greek sufficient 3 Or Holy Spirit: and so throughout this book 4 Or the gospel 5 Greek into 6 Or, me 7 Some ancient authorities omit unto him 8 Or This is my Son; my beloved in whom I am well pleased: see Matt 12:18 (§34)

OT references: Mt 3:17 and Mk 1:11 and Lk 3:22 = Psalm 2:7 and Isaiah 42:1

D  Compare §74 portion K

17
Matt 1:1-17

1 The book of the genealogy of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham.
2 Abraham begat Isaac; and Isaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judah and his brethren;
3 and Judah begat Peraä and Zerah of Tamar; and Peraä begat Hezron; and Hezron begat Ram;
4 and Ram begat Amminadab; and Amminadab begat Nahshon; and Nahshon begat Salmon;
5 and Salmon begat Boaz of Rahab; and Boaz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jesse;
6 and Jesse begat David the king.

And David begat Solomon of her that had been the wife of Uriah;
7 and Solomon begat Rehoboam; and Rehoboam begat Abijah; and Abijah begat Asa;
8 and Asa begat Jehoshaphat; and Jehoshaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Uzziah;
9 and Uzziah begat Jotham; and Jotham begat Ahah; and Ahah begat Hezekiah;
10 and Hezekiah begat Manasseh; and Manasseh begat Amon; and Amon begat Josiah;
11 and Josiah begat Jechoniah and his brethren, at the time of the carrying away to Babylon.

12 And after the carrying away to Babylon, Jechoniah begat Shealtiel; and Shealtiel begat Zerubbabel;
13 and Zerubbabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor;
14 and Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud;
15 and Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Mathan; and Mathan begat Jacob;
16 and Jacob begat Joseph the husband of Mary, of whom was born Jesus, who is called Christ.


23 And Jesus himself, when he began to teach, was about thirty years of age, being the son (as was supposed) of Joseph, the son of Heli, the son of Nathan, the son of David,
24 the son of Mattha, the son of Levi, the son of Melchi, the son of Jesse, the son of Jesse,
25 the son of Mattathias, the son of Nahshon, the son of Amos, the son of Amminadab,
26 the son of Joel, the son of Simeon, the son of Jacob, the son of Isaac,
27 the son of Judah, the son of Peroä, the son of Peræa, the son of Nahor,
28 the son of Zerubbabel, the son of Shaltiel, the son of Ner, the son of Melchi,
29 the son of Addi, the son of Cosam, the son of Elnadam,
30 the son of Elimelech, the son of Jerim, the son of Joseß, the son of Mathat,
31 the son of Levi, the son of Symeon, the son of Judas, the son of Joseph,
32 the son of Osenath, the son of Serafiah, the son of Enos,
33 the son of Seth, the son of Adam, the son of God.

So all the generations from Abraham unto David are fourteen generations; and from David unto the carrying away to Babylon fourteen generations; and from the carrying away to Babylon unto the Christ fourteen generations. (§2)
ACTIVITY OF JOHN AND ITS RELATION TO JESUS

§ 20

WITHDRAWAL OF JESUS TO THE WILDERNESS

Matt 4:1-11

A Then was Jesus led up by the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he afterward hungered.

B And the tempter came and said unto him, If thou art the Son of God, command that these stones become bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

C Then the devil taketh him into the holy city; and he setteth him on the pinnacle of the temple, and saith unto him, If thou art the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: And on their hands they shall bear thee up, Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone.

Jesus said unto him, Again it is written, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

D Again, the devil taketh him unto an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; and he said unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

Compare portion C above

Mark 1:12-13

A And straightway the Spirit driveth him forth into the wilderness. And he was in the wilderness forty days tempted of Satan;


A And Jesus, full of the Holy Spirit, returned from the Jordan, and was led by the Spirit in the wilderness, being tempted of the devil. And he did eat nothing in those days: and when they were completed, he hungered.

B And the devil said unto him, If thou art the Son of God, command this stone that it become bread. And Jesus answered unto him, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone.

C Compare portion E below

D And he led him up, and shewed him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, To thee will I give all this authority, and the glory of them: for it hath been delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship before me, it shall all be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, It is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.

E And he led him to Jerusalem, and set him on the pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou art the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: for it is written,

ERV margin: 1 Or in 2 Greek leaves 3 Or a loaf 4 Greek wing 5 Greek the inhabited earth

OT references: Mt 4:4 and Lk 4:4 = Deuteronomy 8:3  Mt 4:6 and Lk 4:10-11 = Psalm 91:12-12  Mt 4:7 and Lk 4:12 = Deuteronomy 6:16  Mt 4:10 and Lk 4:8 = Deuteronomy 6:13

19
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>MATT 4</th>
<th>MARK 1</th>
<th>LUKE 4</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Then the devil \textsuperscript{11} leaveth him;</td>
<td>and behold, angels came and ministered unto him.</td>
<td>He shall give his angels charge concerning thee, to guard thee:</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>and he was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministered unto him.</td>
<td>On their hands they shall bear thee up, Lest haply thou dash thy foot against a stone. And Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.</td>
<td>\textsuperscript{11} And when the devil had \textsuperscript{13} completed every temptation, he departed from him for a season.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textsuperscript{11} Or \textit{until}

\textsuperscript{13} Lk 4:13 and Mt 4:7 = Deuteronomy 6:16
CHAPTER IV
BEGINNINGS OF THE PUBLIC ACTIVITY OF JESUS

§ 21 GENERAL STATEMENT OF THE WORK OF JESUS

Matt 4:13-17
A Now when he heard that John was delivered up, he withdrew into Galilee;
B leaving Nazareth, he came and dwelt in Capernaum, which is by the sea, in the borders of Zebulun and Naphtali: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet,
C The land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali,
D Toward the sea, beyond Jordan,
E Galilee of the Gentiles,
F The people which sat in darkness
G Saw a great light,
H And to them which sat in the region and shadow of death,
I To them did light spring up.

Mark 1:14-15
A Now after that John was delivered up, Jesus came into Galilee,
B Compare §24 portion A

Luke 4:14-15
A And Jesus returned in the power of the Spirit into Galilee:
B Compare §24 portion A

§ 22 JESUS BEGINS AT NAZARETH

Matt 13:54-58
A And coming into his own country he taught them in their synagogue,

Mark 6:1-6
A And he went out from thence; and he cometh into his own country; and his disciples follow him. And when the sabbath was come, he began to teach in the synagogue:

Luke 4:16-30
A And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and he entered, as his custom was, into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up to read.
B And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Isaiah. And he opened the book, and found the place where it was written,
C The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,

ERV margin: 1 Or through 2 Greek The way of the sea 3 Greek nations: and so elsewhere 4 Or a roll


C With the saying of Jesus in Matt 4:17, compare the saying of John in §17c (Mt).

2X
Matthew 13

C insomuch that they were astonished, and said,
Wherefore hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?

Compare portion E below

D Is not this the carpenter’s son? is not his mother called Mary? and his brethren, James, and Joseph, and Simon, and Judas? And his sisters, are they not all with us?

E Whence then hath this man all these things?

F And they were offended in him.

Mark 6

C and many hearing him were astonished, saying, Whence hath this man these things? and, What is the wisdom that is given unto this man, and what mean such mighty works wrought by his hands?

D Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, and brother of James, and Joses, and Judas, and Simon? and are not his sisters here with us?

E Compare portion C above

F And they were offended in him.

Luke 4

Because he anointed me to preach good tidings to the poor:
He hath sent me to proclaim release to the captives,
And recovering of sight to the blind,
To set at liberty them that are bruised,
To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.
And he closed the book, and gave it back to the attendant, and sat down: and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say unto them, To-day hath this scripture been fulfilled in your ears.

C And all bare him witness, and wondered at the words of grace which proceeded out of his mouth:

D and they said, Is not this Joseph’s son?

Compare portion K below

G And he said unto them, Doubtless ye will say unto me this parable, Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done at Capernaum, do also here in thine own country.

H And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is acceptable in his own country.

I But of a truth I say unto you, There were many widows in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when there came a great famine over all the land; and unto none of them was Elijah sent, but only to Zarephath, in the land of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow. And there were many lepers in

ERV margin:
1 Or Wherefore 2 Or the gospel 3 Or roll 4 Greek powers 5 Some ancient authorities
insert the 6 Greek caused to stumble 7 Greek Sarepta

OT references: Lk 4:25 = 1 Kings 17:1 and 18:1-2 Lk 4:46 = 1 Kings 17:8-9 Lk 4:37 = 2 Kings 5:1, 14

22
BEGINNINGS OF THE PUBLIC ACTIVITY OF JESUS  
§ 23

Matt 13

J And he did: he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief. 

(§54 A–J)

K Compare portion F above

Mark 6

J And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief. 

(§54 A–J)

K Compare portion F above

Luke 4

Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, but only Naaman the Syrian.

K And they were all filled with wrath in the synagogue, as they heard these things; and they rose up, and cast him forth out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might throw him down headlong. But he passing through the midst of them went his way.

§ 23 JESUS WINS FISHERMAN FOLLOWERS

Matt 4:18–22

A And walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw two brethren, Simon who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea; for they were fishermen.

B And he saith unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you fishers of men.

And they straightway left their nets, and followed him.

C And going on from thence he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets;

D and he called them. And they straightway left the boat and their father, and followed him. (+ § 26)

Mark 1:16–20

A And passing along by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew the brother of Simon casting a net in the sea:

Thus for they were fishers.

B Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

And straightway they left the nets, and followed him.

C And going on a little further, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the boat mending the nets.

D straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired servants, and went after him.

Luke 5:1–11

Now it came to pass, while the multitude pressed upon him and heard the word of God, that he was standing by the lake of Gennesaret; and he saw two boats standing by the lake: but the fisherman had gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

And he entered into one of the boats, which was Simon's, and asked him to put out a little from the land. And he sat down and taught the multitudes out of the boat.

And when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Put out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. And Simon answered and said, Master, we toiled all night, and took nothing: but at thy word I will let down the nets. And when they had done this, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes; and their nets were breaking; and they beckoned unto their partners in the other boat, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the boats, so that they began to sink. But Simon Peter, when he saw it, fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord. For he was amazed, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which

ERV margin: 1 Greek powers 2 Greek power 3 Or Jacob: and so elsewhere
LUKE 5

they had taken; and so were also James and John, sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men. And when they had brought their boats to land, they left all, and followed him.  

§ 24 EARLY POPULAR OPINIONS ABOUT JESUS

Matthew
A Compare §21 portion B
B Compare §38 portion X

Mark 1:21-28
A And they go into Caper-21 naum;
B and straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue and taught. And they were astonished at his teaching; for he taught them as having authority, and not as the scribes.
C And straight-23 way there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; and he cried out, say-24 ing, What have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.
D And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And the unclean spirit, tearing him and crying with a loud voice, came out of him.
E And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, What is this? a new teaching! with authority he commandeth even the unclean spirits, and they obey him.
F And the report of him went out straightway everywhere into all the region of Galilee round about.

§ 25 THE HEALING POWER OF JESUS

(§39+) Matt 8:14-17
A And when Jesus was come into Peter’s house,

Mark 1:29-34
A And straightway, when they were come out of the synagogue, they came into the house of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

Luke 4:31-37
A And he came down to31 Capernaum, a city of Galilee.
B And he was teaching them on the sabbath day: and they were astonished at his teaching; for his word was with authority.
C And in the synagogue there was a man, which had a spirit of an unclean devil; and he cried out with a loud voice, 3Ah! what have we34 to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art thou come to destroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.
D And Jesus rebuked him, saying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him down in the midst, he came out of him, having done him no hurt.
E And amazed36 moment came upon all, and they spake together, one with another, saying, What is this? for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean spirits, and they come out.
F And there went forth a37 rumour concerning him into every place of the region round about.

ERV margin: Greek take alive word, that with authority ... come out? Greek demon 3 Or Let alone 4 Or it 5 Or convulsing 6 Or this 7 Some ancient authorities read when he was come out of the synagogue, he came etc.
Matt 8
B he saw his wife’s mother lying sick of a fever. And he touched her hand,
c and the fever left her; and she arose, and ministered unto him.

D And when even was come, they brought unto him many possessed with devils:
E and he cast out the spirits with a word, and healed all that were sick:

G that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Isaiah the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our diseases. (+§39)

Mark 1
B Simon’s wife’s mother lay sick of a fever; and straightway they tell him of her: and he came and took her by the hand, and raised her up;
c and the fever left her, and she ministered unto them.

D And at even, when the sun did set, they brought unto him all that were sick, and them that were possessed with devils. And all the city was gathered together at the door.
E And he healed many that were sick with divers diseases, and cast out many devils;

Compare §34 portion E

F and he suffered not the devils to speak, because they knew him.

Luke 4
B Simon’s wife’s mother was holden with a great fever; and they besought him for her. And he stood over her, and rebuked the fever;
c and it left her: and immediately she rose up and ministered unto them.
D And when the sun was set, all they that had any sick with divers diseases brought them unto him;
E and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them. And devils also came out from many, crying out, and saying, Thou art the Son of God.
F And rebuking them, he suffered them not to speak, because they knew that he was the Christ.

§ 26 JESUS TEACHES THROUGHOUT GALILEE

(§23+) Matt 4:23
A And in the morning, as great while before day, he rose up and went out, and departed into a desert place, and there prayed.
B And Simon and they that were with him followed after him; and they found him, and say unto him, All are seeking thee.
C And he saith unto them, Let us go elsewhere into the next towns, that I may preach there also; for to this end came I forth.

D And Jesus went about in all Galilee, teaching in their synagogues, and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of disease and all manner of sickness among the people. (+§34)

Mark 1:35-39
A And when it was day, he came out and went into a desert place:
B and the multitudes sought after him, and came unto him, and would have stayed him, that he should not go from them.
C But he said unto them, I must preach the good tidings of the kingdom of God to the other cities also: for therefore was I sent.

D And he went into their synagogues throughout all Galilee, preaching and casting out devils.

Luke 4:42-44
A And it came to pass, that, as he was passing through the Coasts of Cyrene, there came unto him a certain Cyrenian, Simon, and set upon him the cross.
B And they that were with him, rebuking them, say, Leave off, which should not speak, because they knew that he was the Christ.

ERV margin: 1 Or demoniacs 2 Greek demons 3 Many ancient authorities add to be Christ: see Luke 4:41 4 Or through 5 Or gospel 6 Some ancient authorities read he 7 Or good tidings: and so elsewhere 8 Very many ancient authorities read Judas

OT references: Mt 8:17 = Isaiah 53:4

D With the latter half of the Matthew record, compare §55 portion b

25
§ 27  JESUS WINS FISHERMAN FOLLOWERS

MATTHEW 4:18-22
A And walking by the sea of Galilee, he saw two brethren, Simon who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea; for they were fishers.
B And he saith unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you fishers of men. And they straightway left the nets, and followed him.
C And going on from thence he saw other two brethren, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, in the boat with Zebedee their father, mending their nets;
D and he called them. And they straightway left the boat and their father, and followed him. (§ 38 A-D)

MARK 1:16-20
A And passing along by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon and Andrew the brother of Simon casting a net in the sea: for they were fishers.
B Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men. And straightway they left the nets, and followed him.
C And going on a little further, he saw James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the boat mending the nets.
D And straightway he called them: and they left their father Zebedee in the boat with the hired servants, and went after him. (§ 38 A-D)

LUKE 5:1-11
Now it came to pass, while the multitude pressed upon him and heard the word of God, that he was standing by the lake of Gennesaret; and he saw two boats standing by the lake: but the fishermen had gone out of them, and were washing their nets. And he entered into one of the boats, which was Simon's, and asked him to put out a little from the land. And he sat down and taught the multitudes out of the boat. And when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Put out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. And Simon answered and said, Master, we toiled all night, and took nothing: but at thy word I will let down the nets. And when they had done this, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes; and their nets were breaking; and they beckoned unto their partners in the other boat, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the boats, so that they began to sink. But Simon Peter, when he saw it, fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord. For he was amazed, and all that were with him, at the draught of the fishes which they had taken; and so were also James and John, sons of Zebedee, which were partners with Simon. And Jesus said unto Simon, Fear not; from henceforth thou shalt catch men. And when they had brought their boats to land, they left all, and followed him.

§ 28  GROWTH IN FAME OF JESUS

(Matt 8:2-4)
A And behold, there came to him a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

(Mark 1:40-45)
A And there cometh to him a leper, beseeching him, and kneeling down to him, and saying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

(Luke 5:12-16)
A And it came to pass, while he was in one of the cities, behold, a man full of leprosy: and when he saw Jesus, he fell on his face, and besought him, saying, Lord, if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

ERV margin: 1 Or Jacob: and so elsewhere 2 Greek take alive 3 Some ancient authorities omit and kneeling down to him

hand, and touched him, say-

And being moved with compassion, he stretched his hand, and touched him, say-
Matt 8

ing, I will; be thou made clean. And straightway his leprosy was cleansed.

Mark 1

forth his hand, and touched him, and saith unto him, I will; be thou made clean. And straightway the leprosy departed from him, and he was made clean.

Luke 5

ing, I will; be thou made clean. And straightway the leprosy departed from him.

C And 4 Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer the gift that Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them. (+§39)

C And he strictly charged him, and straightway sent him out, and saith unto him, See thou say nothing to any man: but go thy way, shew thyself to the priest, and offer for thy cleansing the things which Moses commanded, for a testimony unto them.

D But he went out, and began to publish it much, and to spread abroad the matter, insomuch that Jesus could no more openly enter into a city, but was without in desert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

D But so much the more went abroad the report concerning him: and great multitudes came together to hear, and to be healed of their infirmities. But he withdrew himself into the deserts, and prayed.
CHAPTER V

DEVELOPMENT OF OPPOSITION TO JESUS

§ 29 CRITICISM OF FREE FORGIVENESS FOR SIN

(MATT 9:2-8)

And when he entered again into Capernaum after some days, it was noised that he was in the house. And many were gathered together, so that there was no longer room for them, no, not even about the door: and he spake the word unto them.

And behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed:

And Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, be of good cheer; thy sins are forgiven.

And they could not come nigh unto him for the crowd, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed whereon the sick of the palsy lay.

And And Jesus seeing their faith saith unto the sick of the palsy, Son, thy sins are forgiven.

But there were certain of the scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, Why doth this man thus speak? he blasphemeth: who can forgive sins but one, even God?

And And straightway Jesus, perceiving in his spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, saith unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts? Whether is it easier, to say, Thy sins are forgiven; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed?

But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins (then saith he to the sick of the palsy), Arise, and take up thy bed, and go unto thy house.

MARK 2:1-12

LUKE 5:17-26

A And it came to pass on one of those days, that he was teaching; and there were Pharisees and doctors of the law sitting by, which were come out of every village of Galilee and Judea and Jerusalem: and the power of the Lord was with him to heal.

B And behold, men bring on a bed a man that was palsied: and they sought to bring him in, and to lay him before him.

C And not finding by what way they might bring him in because of the multitude, they went up to the house-top, and let him down through the tiles with his couch into the midst before Jesus.

D And And seeing their faith, he said, Man, thy sins are forgiven thee.

E And the scribes and the Pharisees began to reason, saying, Who is this that speaketh blasphemies? Who can forgive sins, but God alone?

F But Jesus perceiving their reasonings, answered and said unto them, What reason ye in your hearts?

G But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive sins (he saith to the sick of the palsy), I say unto thee, Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thy house.
MATTHEW 9:9-13

And he arose, and 7 departed to his house. But 8 when the multitudes saw it, they were afraid, and glorified God, which had given such ‘power unto men.

MARK 2:13-17

And 12 he arose, and straightway took up the bed, and went forth before them all; insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, saying, We never saw it on this fashion.

LUKE 5:27-32

And 25 immediately he rose up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his house, glorifying God. And 26 amazement took hold on all, and they glorified God; and they were filled with fear, saying, We have seen strange things to-day.

§ 30 CRITICISM FOR ASSOCIATION WITH SINNERS

MATTHEW 9:9-13

B And as Jesus passed by 9 from thence, he saw a man, called Matthew, sitting at the place of toll: and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he arose, and followed him.

MARK 2:13-17

A And he went forth again 13 by the sea side; and all the multitude resorted unto him, and he taught them.

LUKE 5:27-32

B And beheld a publican, named Levi, sitting at the place of toll, and he saith unto him, Follow me. And he forsook all, and rose up and followed him.

C And it came to pass, as he 10 was sitting at meat in his house, and many publicans and sinners came and sat down with Jesus and his disciples.

D And 11 when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto his disciples, Why eateth your Master with the publicans and sinners?

A And he saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of a physician, but they that are sick.

B But he said, Go ye and learn what this meaneth, I desire mercy, and not sacrifice:

C For I came not to call the righteous, but sinners.

D And the scribes 16 of the Pharisees, when they saw that he was eating with the sinners and publicans, said unto his disciples, He eateth 17 and drinketh with publicans and sinners.

E And 17 when Jesus heard it, he saith unto them, They that are whole have no need of a physician; but they that are sick.

E And Jesus an-31 swering said unto them, They that are whole have no need of a physician; but they that are sick.

§ 31 CRITICISM OF ATTITUDE TOWARD FASTING

MATTHEW 9:14-17

A Then come to him the dis-14 ciples of John, saying, Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not?

MARK 2:18-22

A And John’s disciples and 18 the Pharisees were fasting: and they come and say unto him, Why do John’s disciples

LUKE 5:33-39

A And they said unto him, 33 The disciples of John fast often, and make supplications; likewise also the dis-

ERV margin: 1 Or authority 2 Greek recited: and so always 3 That is, collectors or rentiers of Roman taxes: and so elsewhere 4 Some ancient authorities read and the Pharisees 5 Or the Pharisees and the scribes among them 6 Or, How is it that he eateth . . . sinners? 7 Some ancient authorities omit and drinketh 8 Or Teacher 9 Greek strong 10 Some ancient authorities omit of

OT references: Mt 9:13 = Hosea 6:6

Compare §32 portion 2

30
Matt 9

b And Jesus said unto them, Can the sons of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then will they fast.

c And no man puteth new wine into old wine-skins; else the skins burst, and the wine is spilled, and the skins perish: but they put new wine into fresh wine-skins, and both are preserved. (+§52 B)

Mark 2

b And Jesus said unto them, Can the sons of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as they have the bridegroom with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them, they cannot fast. But the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, and then will they fast in that day.

c No man seweth a piece of undressed cloth upon an old garment: else that which should fill it up taketh from it, the new from the old, and a worse rent is made.

d Neither do men put new wine into old wine-skins: else the skins burst, and the wine is spilled, and the skins perish; but they put new wine into fresh wine-skins, and both are preserved. (+§52 B)

Luke 5

b And Jesus said unto them, Can ye make the sons of the bride-chamber fast, while the bridegroom is with them? But the days will come; and when the bridegroom shall be taken away from them, then will they fast in those days.

c He spake also a parable unto them; No man rendeth a piece from a new garment and putteth it upon an old garment; else he will rend the new, and also the piece from the new will not agree with the old. But new wine must be put into fresh wine-skins. No man having drunk old wine desireth new: for he saith, The old is good.

§ 32 CRITICISM FOR WORKING ON THE SABBATH

§ 41+ (Matt 12:1-8)

A At that season Jesus went on the sabbath day through the cornfields; and his disciples were an hunred, and began to pluck ears of corn, and to eat.

B But the Pharisees, when they saw it, said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath.

C But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was an hunred, and they that were with him; how he entered into the house of God, and 'did eat the shewbread, which it was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them that were with him, but only for the priests?

Mark 2:23-28

A And it came to pass, that he was going on the sabbath day through the cornfields; and his disciples 'began, as they went, to pluck the ears of corn.

B And the Pharisees said unto him, Behold, why do they on the sabbath day that which is not lawful?

C And he said unto them, Did ye never read what David did, when he had need, and was an hunred, he, and they that were with him? How he entered into the house of God which Abiathar was high priest, and did eat the shewbread, which it is not lawful to eat save for the priests, and gave also to them that were with him?
RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

§ 32

MATTHEW 12

D Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath day the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are guiltless? But I say unto you, that one greater than the temple is here.

F And he said unto them, The sabbath was made for man, and not man for the sabbath:

G so that the Son of man is lord even of the sabbath.

MARK 2

F And he said unto them, 5

G For the Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

LUKE 6

F And he said unto them, 5

G The Son of man is lord of the sabbath.

§ 33 CRITICISM OF HEALING ON THE SABBATH

MATTHEW 12:9-14

A And he departed thence, 9 and went into their synagogue: and behold, a man having a withered hand.

B And they asked him, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath day? that they might accuse him.

D And he said unto them, What man shall there be of you, that shall have one sheep, and if this fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? How much then is a man of more value than a sheep!

E Therefore it is lawful to do good on the sabbath day.

F Then saith he to the man, Stretch forth he to the man, Stretch forth

MARK 3:1-6

A And he entered again into the synagogue; and there was a man there which had his hand withered.

B And they watched him, whether he would heal him on the sabbath day; that they might accuse him.

C And he saith unto the man that had his hand withered, 4 Stand forth.

LUKE 6:6-11

A And it came to pass on another sabbath, that he entered into the synagogue and taught: and there was a man there, and his right hand was withered.

B And the scribes and the Pharisees watched him, whether he would heal on the sabbath; that they might find how to accuse him.

C But he knew their thoughts; and he said to the man that had his hand withered, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth.

D And he said unto them, 14:

Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a well, and will not straightway draw him up on a sabbath day? (§102 D)

F And he saith unto them, 4

Is it lawful on the sabbath day to do good, or to do harm? to save a life, or to kill? But they held their peace.

F And when he had looked round about on them looked round about on them

F And he looked round about on them all, and

Jesus said unto them, I ask you, Is it lawful on the sabbath to do good, or to do harm? to save a life, or to destroy it?

And he answered and said unto them, 9

But they held their peace. (§102 B=Lk 14:3-4)

ERV margin: 1 Greek a greater thing 2 Greek Arise into the midst 3 Many ancient authorities read a son:

see Luke 13:15

OT references: Mt 12:5=Numbers 28:9-10 Mt 12:7=Hosea 6:6

E Compare §30 portion F

F And Jesus answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath, or not? But they held their peace. (§102 B=Lk 14:3-4)

32
Matt 12
thy hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, as the other.

Mark 3
with anger, being grieved at the hardening of their heart, he saith unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he stretched it forth: and his hand was restored.

Luke 6
said unto him, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored.

But the Pharisees went out, and took counsel against him, how they might destroy him. (§34C)

And the Pharisees went out, and straightway with the Herodians took counsel against him, how they might destroy him.

But they were filled with madness; and communed one with another what they might do to Jesus.

ERV margin: 1 Or foolishness
CHAPTER VI
DEFINITION OF STANDARDS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS BY JESUS

§ 34 WIDESPREAD FAME OF JESUS

Mark 3:7–12
Luke

A And Jesus with his disciples 7 withdrew to the sea:
B and a great multitude from Galilee
followed: and from Judæa,
and from Jerusalem, and from 8
Idumæa, and beyond Jordan,
and about Tyre and Sidon, a
great multitude, hearing 9what
great things he did, came unto
him.

C Compare portion A above
D And he spake to his dis-
 ciples, that a little boat should
 wait on him because of the
 crowd, lest they should throng
 him: for he had healed many10
 insomuch that as many as had
 plagues pressed upon him
that they might touch him.

E And the unclean spirits,11
whenever they beheld him,
 fell down before him, and
 cried, saying, Thou art the
Son of God.

F Compare §35 portion E
F And he charged12
them much that they should
not make him known.

a Or all the things that he did
b Greek scourges
c Greek fell
do Or through

OT references: Mt 12:18–21 = Isaiah 42:1–4
MATT 12
Neither shall any one hear his voice in the streets.
A bruised reed shall he not break,
And smoking flax shall he not quench,
Till he send forth judgement unto victory.
And in his name shall the Gentiles hope. (+ §45)

§ 35 APPOINTMENT OF TWELVE ASSOCIATES

MATT 10:1-4
A Compare §36 portion A
B And he called unto him his twelve disciples, and gave them authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of disease and all manner of sickness.
C Now the names of the twelve apostles are these: The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother; Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus; Simon the Cananean, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him. (§50 CD)

MARK 3:13-19
A And he goeth up into the mountain,
B and calleth unto him whom he himself would: and they went unto him. And he appointed twelve, that they might be with him, and that he might send them forth to preach, and to have authority to cast out devils:
C Simon he surnamed Peter; and James the son of Zebedee, and John the brother of James; and them he surnamed Boanerges, which is, Sons of thunder: and Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Cananean, and Judas Iscariot, which also betrayed him.

LUKE 6:12-19
A And it came to pass in these days, that he went out into the mountain to pray; and he continued all night in prayer to God.
B And when it was day, he called his disciples: and he chose from them twelve, whom also he named apostles;
C Simon, whom he also named Peter, and Andrew his brother, and James and John, and Philip and Bartholomew, and Matthew and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon which was called the Zealot, and Judas the son of James, and Judas Iscariot, which was the traitor;
D he came down with them, and stood on a level place,
E and a great multitude of his disciples, and a great number of the people from all Judea and Jerusalem, and the sea coast of Tyre and Sidon, which came to hear him, and to be healed of their diseases;
F and they that were troubled with unclean spirits were healed.
G And all the multitude sought to touch him: for power came forth from him, and healed them all.

ERV margin: 1 Some ancient authorities add whom also he named apostles: see Luke 6:13 2 Greek demons 3 Some ancient authorities insert and he appointed twelve 4 Or Zealot: see Luke 6:15 and Acts 1:13 5 Or, brother: see Jude 1 6 Or delivered him up: and so always
§36 DISCOURSE ON STANDARDS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS

(§34 B+) Matt 5:1—8:1

A And seeing the multitudes, he went up into the mountain: and when he had sat down, his disciples came unto him:
B and he opened his mouth and taught them, saying,

Blessed are the poor in spirit: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted.

Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth.

Blessed are they that hunger and thirst after righteousness: for they shall be filled.

Blessed are ye when men shall reproach you, and persecute you, and say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad: for great is your reward in heaven: for so persecuted they the prophets which were before you.

Luke 6:20–49

A Compare §35 portion A

B And he lifted up his eyes on his disciples, and said,

Blessed are ye poor: for yours is the kingdom of God.

Compare portion D above

C Compare portion F below

E Blessed are ye that hunger now: for ye shall be filled.

F Blessed are ye that weep now: for ye shall laugh.

H Compare portion I below

I Blessed are ye, when men shall hate you, and when they shall separate you from your company, and reproach you, and cast out your name as evil, for the Son of man’s sake. Rejoice in that day, and leap for joy: for behold, your reward is great in heaven: for in the same manner did their fathers unto the prophets.

J But woe unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation.

Woe unto you, ye that are full now! for ye shall hunger.

Woe unto you, ye that laugh now! for ye shall mourn and weep.

Woe unto you, when all men shall speak well of you! for in the same manner did their fathers to the false prophets.

K Ye are the salt of the earth:

L but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and trodden under foot of men.

M Ye are the light of the world.

N A city set on a hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a lamp, and put it under the bushel, but on the stand; and it shineth unto all that are in the house.

O Even so let your light shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.

ERV margin: Some ancient authorities transpose verses 4 and 5

OT references: Mt 5:5 = Psalm 37:11

1 Salt therefore is good: but if the salt have lost its saltiness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace one with another. (§78 O = Mk 9:50)

N Is the lamp brought to be put under the bushel, or under the bed, and not to be put on the stand? (§47 Q = Mk 4:21)

N And no man, when he hath lighted a lamp, putteth it under a bed: but putteth it on a stand, that they which enter in may see the light. (§47 Q = Lk 8:26)
Matt 5

Think not that I came to destroy the law or the prophets: I came not to destroy, but to fulfill.

For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass away from the law, till all things be accomplished.

Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, he shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.

Luke

Q But it is easier for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one tittle of the law to fall. (§207 D)

For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no wise enter into the kingdom of heaven.

§37 DISCOURSE ON STANDARDS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS (continued)

A Ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: but I say unto you, that every one who is angry with his brother shall be in danger of the judgment; and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council; and whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of the hell of fire.

If therefore thou offer a gift at the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee, leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way, first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.

B Agree with thine adversary quickly, whiles thou art with him in the way; lest haply the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou have paid the last farthing.

C Ye have heard that it was said, Thou shalt not commit adultery: but I say unto you, that every one that looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if thy right eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body be.

ERV margin: 1 Many ancient authorities insert without cause 2 An expression of contempt 3 Or Mesh, a Hebrew expression of condemnation 4 Greek anoi nato in to 5 Greek Gehenna of fire 6 Some ancient authorities omit deliver thee 7 Greek exactor

OT references: Mt 5:21 = Exodus 20:13 and Deuteronomy 5:17; also Exodus 21:32 and Leviticus 24:17 and Deuteronomy 17:8-9 Mt 5:27 = Exodus 20:14 and Deuteronomy 5:18

C And if thy hand or thy foot causeth thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into the eternal fire. And if thine eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into the hell of fire.

(§78 M = Mt 18:8-9)

C And if thy hand cause thee to stumble, cut it off: it is good for thee to enter into life maimed, rather than having thy two hands to go into hell, into the unquenchable fire. And if thy foot cause thee to stumble, cut it off: it is good for thee to enter into life halt, rather than having thy two feet to be cast into hell. And if thine eye cause thee to stumble, cast it out: it is good for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell.

(§78 M = Mk 9:43-47)
Matt 5
cast into 'hell. And if thy right hand causeth thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body go into 'hell.

D
It was said also, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement:

E
but I say unto you, that every one that putteth away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress: and whosoever shall marry her when she is put away committeth adultery.

F
Again, ye have heard that it was said to them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: but I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by the heaven, for it is the throne of God; nor by the earth, for it is the footstool of his feet; nor by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, for thou canst not make one hair white or black.

But let your speech be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay; and whatsoever is more than these is of the evil one.

G
Ye have heard that it was said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth:

H
Compare portion N below

I
But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them that hate you, bless them that curse you, pray for them that despitefully use you.

J
To him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other; and from him that taketh away thy cloak withhold not thy coat also.

K
Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

L
Ye have heard that it was said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy:

M
Compare portion Q below

Luke 6

N
Every one that putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery; and he that marrieth one that is put away from a husband committeth adultery. (§107 E)

O
But I say unto you which hear, Love your enemies, do good to them that hate you, bless them that curse you, pray for them that despitefully use you.

P
To him that smiteth thee on the one cheek offer also the other; and from him that taketh away thy cloak withhold not thy coat also.

Q
Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away.

R
Ye have heard that it was said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy:

S
Compare portion Q below

ERV margin: 1 Greek Gehenna 2 Or toward 3 Some ancient authorities read But your speech shall be 4 Or evil:
as in verse 39 and 6:13 5 Or evil 6 Greek impress


Text:

M And if ye love them that love you, what thank have ye? for even sinners love those that love them. And if ye do good to them that do good to you, what thank have ye? for even sinners do the same. And if ye lend to them of your own will, what thank have ye? even sinners lend to sinners, to receive again as much.

39
\textbf{Matt 5–6}

N I say unto you, Love your enemies, and pray for them that persecute you;
O \textit{Compare portion J above}

\textbf{Luke 6}

N But love your enemies, and do them\textsuperscript{35} good, \textit{Compare portion H above}
O \textit{and lend, 'never despairing; and your reward shall be great,}
P \textit{and ye shall be sons of the Most High: for he is kind toward the unthankful and evil.}
Q \textit{Compare portion M above}

R Ye therefore shall be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect.
S Take heed that ye do not your righteousness before men, to be seen of them: else ye have no reward with your Father which is in heaven.
T When therefore thou dost alms, sound not a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. But when thou dost alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: that thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret shall recompense thee.
U And when ye pray, ye shall not be as the hypocrites: for they love to stand and pray in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have received their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thine inner chamber, and having shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret, and thy Father which seeth in secret shall recompense thee.
V And in praying use not vain repetitions, as the Gentiles do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things you have need of, before ye ask him.
W After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. And bring us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one.
X For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

\textit{ERV margin:} 1 Some ancient authorities read \textit{despairing of no man} 2 That is, collectors or renters of Roman taxes: and so elsewhere 3 Some ancient authorities read \textit{God your Father} 4 Greek \textit{our bread for the coming day} 5 Or \textit{evil} 6 Many authorities, some ancient, but with variations, add \textit{For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.} 7 Many ancient authorities read \textit{Our Father, which art in heaven:} see Matt 6:9 8 Many ancient authorities add \textit{Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth:} see Matt 6:10 9 Many ancient authorities add \textit{but deliver us from the evil one} (or evil) see Matt 6:13

V With Matt 6:8 above, compare Matt 6:32=Luke 12:30 in §38 D
X And whenever ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have much against any one; that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. (§78 X=Mt 18:32)
X So shall also my heavenly Father do unto you, if ye forgive not every one his brother from your hearts. (§78 X=Mt 18:32)
Matthew 6

Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypo-
rites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure
their faces, that they may be seen of men to
fast. Verily I say unto you, They have re-
ceived their reward. But thou, when thou
fastest, anoint thy head, and wash thy face;
that thou be not seen of men to fast, but of thy
Father which is in secret: and thy Father,
which seeth in secret, shall recompense thee.

Lk 18:10-13

Disobedience to the father is the same as not giving God His due. God is a sovereign King. "Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than the food, and the body than the raiment? Be not anxious for your life, nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than the food, and the body than the raiment? Be anxious for your life, and the body shall take care of itself. But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field, which is today, and is to-morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith? Be not therefore anxious, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherewith shall we be clothed? For after all these things do the Gentiles seek: for your heavenly Father knoweth that you have need of all these things. But seek ye first his kingdom, and his righteousness; and these things shall be added unto you."

Luke 12:22-31

Sell that ye have, and give alms; make for
yourselves purses which wax not old, a treasure
in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief
doth break in and steal. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

§ 38 DISCOURSE ON STANDARDS OF RIGHTEOUSNESS (concluded)

A Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon the
earth, where moth and rust doth consume, and
where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth consume, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: for where thy treasure is, there will thy heart be also.

B The lamp of thy body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is the darkness!

C No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

D Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. For the life is more than the food, and the body than the raiment.

Consider the ravens, that they sow not, neither reap; which have no store-chamber nor barn; and God feedeth them: of how much more value are ye than the birds? And which of you by being anxious can add a cubit unto his stature? If ye then be not able to do even that which is least, why are ye anxious concerning the rest? Consider the lilies, how they grow: they toil not, neither do they spin: yet I say unto you, Even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field, which is today, and is to-morrow is cast into the oven, how much more shall he clothe you, O ye of little faith? And seek not ye what ye shall eat, and what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind. For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: but your Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things. Howbeit seek ye first his kingdom, and these things shall be added unto you.
Matt 7

F* Judge not, that ye be not judged. For 1 with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be 2 judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured unto you.

Linda:

Let them alone: they are blind guides. And 2:5 if the blind guide the blind, both shall fall into a 3 pit. (§47)

A disciple is not above his master, nor is 4 servant above his lord. It is enough for the 5 disciple that he be as his master, and the 6 servant as his lord. (§57)

And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me cast out the mote out of thine eye; and lo, the beam is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye; and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote out of thine brother's eye.

Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast your pearls before the swine, lest haply they trample them under their feet, and turn and rend you.

Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: for every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, who, if his son shall ask him for a loaf, will give him a stone; or if he shall ask for a fish, will give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

All things therefore whatsoever ye do ye would that men should do unto you, even so do ye also unto them: for this is the law and the prophets.

Enter ye in by the narrow gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many be they that enter in thereby. 2For narrow is the gate, and straitened the way, that leadeth unto life, and few be they that find it.

Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravening wolves.

Luke 6

F* And judge not, and ye shall not be judged. 37 and condemn not, and ye shall not be condemned: release, and ye shall be released: give, and it shall be given unto you; good shall be pressed down, shaken together, running over, shall they give into your bosom. For with what measure ye mete it shall be measured to you again.

G And he spake also a parable unto them, Can 39 the blind guide the blind? shall they not both fall into a pit?

H The disciple is not above his master: but every one when he is perfected shall be as his master.

I And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Or how canst thou say to thy brother, Brother, let me cast out the mote that is in thine eye, when thou thyself beholdest not the beam that is in thine own eye? Thou hypocrite, cast out first the beam out of thine own eye, and then shalt thou see clearly to cast out the mote that is in thy brother's eye.

Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. And of which of you that is 4:11 father shall his son ask a loaf, and he give him a stone? or a fish, and he for a fish give him a serpent? Or if he shall ask an egg, will he give him a scorpion? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him? (§85)

L Compare §37 portion K

M Strive to enter in by the narrow door: for many, I say unto you, shall seek to enter in, and 24 shall not be able. (§100)

For there is no good tree that bringeth forth corrupt fruit; nor again a corrupt tree that bringeth forth good fruit.

F* For each tree is known by its own fruit. For of thorns men do not gather figs, nor of a Bramble bush gather they grapes.

ERV margin: 1 Or teacher. 2 Greek bondservant. 3 Some ancient authorities omit a loaf, and he give him a stone? or 4 Some ancient authorities omit is the gate 5 Many ancient authorities read How narrow is the gate, etc.

F With what measure ye mete it shall be measured unto you: and more shall be given unto you. (§47 U = Mk 4:24)
2 On these two commandments hangeth the whole law, and the prophets. (§130 N = Mt 22:40)
3 With portions of above, compare §45 K. With the first half of portion R above, compare the second half of portion T below
Matt 7

Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but the corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit.

For out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. The good man out of his good treasure bringeth forth good things: and the evil man out of his evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. (v 19)

A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit.

Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

Therefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

Many will say to me in that day, Lord, did we not prophesy by thy name, and cast out devils, and in thy name do many mighty works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

Every one therefore which heareth these words of mine, and doeth them, shall be likened unto a wise man, which built his house upon the rock: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon the rock. And every one that heareth these words of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: and the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and smote upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall thereof.

And it came to pass, when Jesus ended these words, the multitudes were astonished at his teaching: for he taught them as one having authority, and not as their scribes.

And when he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him. (+§ 28)

Luke 6

The good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and the evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth that which is evil: for out of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh.

Compare portion O above

And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?

Then shall ye begin to say, We did eat and drink in thy presence, and thou didst teach in our streets; and he shall say, I tell you, I know not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity. (v 46)

Every one that cometh unto me, and heareth my words, and doeth them, I will shew you to whom he is like: he is like a man building a house, who digged deep, and laid a foundation upon the rock: and when a flood arose, the stream brake against that house, and could not shake it; because it had been well built. But he that heareth, and doeth not, is like a man that built a house upon the earth without a foundation; against which the stream brake, and straightway it fell in; and the ruin of that house was great.

Compare §24 portion B

Compare §35 portions DE

ERV margin: 1 Greek demons  2 Greek powers  3 Many ancient authorities read for it had been founded upon the rock: as in Matt 7:25

OT references: Mt 7:23 and Lk 13:27 = Psalm 6.3

For a saying by John the Baptist similar to verse 19, compare §17 n. end. With verse 20 compare portion r above.
CHAPTER VII
CONTEMPORARY OPINIONS ABOUT THE WORTH OF JESUS

§ 39 OPINION OF A ROMAN CENTURION

(Matt 8:5-13)
A And when he was entered into Capernaum, there came unto him a centurion, beseeching him, and saying, Lord, my servant lieth in the house sick of the palsy, grievously torment. And he saith unto him, I will come and heal him.

B And the centurion answered and said, Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but only say the word, and my servant shall be healed. For I also am a man under authority, having under myself soldiers: and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

C And when Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them that followed, Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

D And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and from the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

E And Jesus said unto the centurion, Go thy way; as thou hast believed, so be it done unto thee. And the servant was healed in that hour. (+§ 25)

Luke 7:1-10
A After he had ended all his sayings in the ears of the people, he entered into Capernaum.

B And a certain centurion's servant, who was dear unto him, was sick and at the point of death. And when he heard concerning Jesus, he sent unto him elders of the Jews, besought him that he would come and save his servant.

C And they, when they came to Jesus, besought him earnestly, saying, He is worthy that thou shouldest do this for him: for he loveth our nation, and himself built us our synagogue.

D And Jesus went with them.

E And when he was now not far from the house, the centurion sent friends to him, saying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyself: for I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: wherefore neither thought I myself worthy to come unto thee: but say the word, and my servant shall be healed. For I also am a man set under authority, having under myself soldiers: and I say to this one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my servant, Do this, and he doeth it.

F And when Jesus heard these things, he marvelled at him, and turned and said unto the multitude that followed him, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel.

G There shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth without. And they shall come from the east and from the west, and from the north and south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.

H And they that were sent, returning to the house, found the servant whole.

ERV margin: 2 Or boy 3 Greek bond servant 4 Or precious to him or honourable with him 5 Greek sufficient 6 Some ancient authorities insert set as in Luke 7:8 7 Greek say with a word 8 Many ancient authorities read With no man in Israel have I found so great faith 9 Greek recline

OT references: Mt 8:11 and Lk 13:20 = Psalm 107:3 and Isaiah 49:12

D And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§48 E = Mt 13:49)
D And cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§48 Q = Mt 13:50)
D And cut him out of the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§129 Q = Mt 25:30)
D And shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§130 D = Mt 25:30)
D And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§130 Q = Mt 25:30)
§ 40 OPINION OF THE COMMON PEOPLE

LUKE 7:11-17
And it came to pass soon afterwards, that he went to a city called Nain; and his disciples went with him, and a great multitude. Now when he drew near to the gate of the city, behold, there was carried out one that was dead, the only son of his mother, and she was a widow: and much people of the city was with her. And when the Lord saw her, he had compassion on her, and said unto her, Weep not. And he came nigh and touched the bier: and the bearers stood still. And he said, Young man, I say unto thee, Arise. And he that was dead sat up, and began to speak. And he gave him to his mother. And fear took hold on all: and they glorified God, saying, A great prophet is arisen among us: and, God hath visited his people. And this report went forth concerning him in the whole of Judea, and all the region round about.

§ 41 OPINION OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

(§ 57+) MATTHEW 11:2-30
A Now when John heard in the prison the works of the Christ, he sent by his disciples, and said unto him, Art thou he that cometh, or look we for another?

B And he answered, and said unto them, Go your way and tell John the things which ye do hear and see: the blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, and the dead are raised up, and the poor have good tidings preached to them. And blessed is he, whosoever shall find none occasion of stumbling in me.

C And as these went their way, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to behold? a reed shaken with the wind? But what went ye out for to see? a man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they that wear soft raiment are in kings' houses. But wherefore went ye out? to see a prophet? Yes, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.

This is he, of whom it is written,

Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, Who shall prepare thy way before thee. Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women there hath not arisen a greater

ERV margin:
1 Many ancient authorities read on the next day. a Greek certain two. 3 Greek sources.
4 Or the gospel. 5 Many ancient authorities read But what went ye out to see? a prophet?


x Compare the record of Mark in § 17 portion x.

46
Matt 11

than John the Baptist: yet he that is but little
in the kingdom of heaven is greater than he.

And from the days of John the Baptist until
now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence,
and men of violence take it by force. For all
the prophets and the law prophesied until
John.

And if ye are willing to receive him, this is
Elijah, which is to come.

He that hath ears let him hear.

But whereunto shall I liken this generation?
It is like unto children sitting in the marketplaces,
which call unto their fellows, and say, We piped unto
you, and ye did not dance; we wailed, and ye did not
mourn. For John came neither eating nor drinking,
and they say, He hath a "devil. The Son of man came eating
and drinking, and they say, Behold, a gluttonous
man, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and
sinners! And wisdom is justified by her works.

Then began he to upbraid the cities wherein most
of his mighty works were done, because they repented not.

Compare portion O below

Luke 7

He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

And all the people when they heard, and the publicans,
justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John.
But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected for themselves
the counsel of God, being not baptized of him.

Whereunto then shall I liken this generation,
and to what are they like? They are like unto children
that sit in the marketplace, and call one to another;
which say, We piped unto you, and ye did not dance;
we wailed, and ye did not weep. For
John the Baptist is come eating no bread nor
drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a "devil.
The Son of man is come eating and drinking;
and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous
man, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and
sinners! And wisdom is justified of all her children.

Compare portion L above

I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable in
that day for Sodom, than for that city.

Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon which were done in you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. Howbeit I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt be brought down unto Hades:

for if the mighty works had been done in Sodom which were done in thee, it would have remained until this day.

Howbeit I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee.

In the same hour he rejoiced in the Holy Spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast hidden these things from the wise and understanding, and revealed them unto babes. Even so, Father, for so it seemed good in thy sight.

ERS margin: 1 Greek lesser 2 Or, him 3 Some ancient authorities omit to hear 4 Or having been 5 Or not having been 6 Greek beat the breast 7 Greek demon 8 Or was 9 Many ancient authorities read children: as in Luke 7:35 10 Greek powers 11 Many ancient authorities read be brought down 12 Or by 13 Or praise


O For another record of the identification of John the Baptist with Elijah by Jesus, compare §74 K-O
H He that hath ears, let him hear. H Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. H He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

H If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear. H He that hath ears, let him hear. H He that hath ears, let him hear.
Matt 11
and earth, that thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto babes: yea, Father, so it was well-pleasing in thy sight. 

Luke 9: All things have been delivered unto me of my Father; and no one knoweth the Son, save the Father; neither doth any know the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him. 

Come unto me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest. Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me; for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find rest unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light. (+§32)

§42 OPINION OF A SINNER vs OPINION OF A PHARISEE

Luke 7:36-50
AAnd one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he entered into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat. And behold, a woman which was in the city, sinner; and when she knew that he was sitting at meat in the Pharisee's house, she brought an alabaster cruse of ointment, and standing behind him at his feet, weeping, began to wet his feet with her tears, and wiped them with the hair of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed them with the ointment.

BNow when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw it, he spake within himself, saying, This man, if he were a prophet, would have perceived who and what manner of woman this is which toucheth him, that she is a sinner.

CAnd Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on. A certain lender had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty. When they had not wherewith to pay, he for gave them both. Which of them therefore will love him most? Simon answered and said, He, I suppose, to whom he forgave the most. And he said unto him, Thou hast rightly judged.

And turning to the woman, he said unto Simon, Seest thou this woman? I entered into thine house, thou gavest me no water for my feet: but she hath wetted my feet with her tears, and wiped them with her hair. Thou gavest me no kiss: but she, since the time I came in, hath not ceased to kiss my feet. My head with oil thou didst not anoint: but she hath anointed my feet with ointment. Wherefore I say unto thee, Her sins, which are many, are forgiven; for she loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, the same loveth little.

ERV margin: 1 Or that 2 Or a flask 3 Greek kissed much 4 Some ancient authorities read the prophet: see John 1:15 5 Or Teacher 6 The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence halfpenny

OT references: Mt 11:19=Jeremiah 6:16

q All authority hath been given unto me in heaven and on earth. (§151 b=Mt 28:18)
CONTEMPORARY OPINIONS ABOUT THE WORTH OF JESUS § 45

LUKE 7
E And he said unto her, Thy sins are forgiven. 48 And they that sat at meat with him began to say within themselves, Who is this that even forgiveth sins? And he said unto the woman, Thy faith hath saved thee; go in peace.

§ 43 ON A TOUR IN GALILEE

LUKE 8:1–3
And it came to pass soon afterwards, that he went about through cities and villages, preaching and bringing the good tidings of the kingdom of God, and with him the twelve, and certain women that had been healed of evil spirits and infirmities, Mary that was called Magdalene, from whom seven devils had gone out, and Joanna the wife of Chuza Herod’s steward, and Susanna, and many others, which ministered unto them of their substance.

§ 44 OPINION OF THE FRIENDS OF JESUS

MARK 3:19b–21
And he cometh into a house. And the multitude cometh together again, so that they could not so much as eat bread. And when his friends heard it, they went out to lay hold on him: for they said, He is beside himself.

§ 45 OPINION OF THE RELIGIOUS LEADERS

(§34+) MATTHEW 12:22–45
A Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the dumb man spake and saw. B And all the multitudes were amazed, and said, Is this the son of David? C But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This man doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. D Compare portion Q below

E And knowing their thoughts he said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation: and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: and if Satan casteth out devils E And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan? And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand.

ERV margin: 1 Or among 2 Or gospel 3 Greek demon 4 Many ancient authorities read him 5 Or home 6 Or a demoniac 7 Greek demon 8 Or in 9 Or In 10 Or and house falleth upon house

ABC For another Matthew account covering portions ABC, compare §53 B
MATT 12
Satan, he is divided against himself; how then shall his kingdom stand?

Mark 3
house will not be able to stand. And if Satan hath risen up against himself, and is divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

Luke 11
because ye say that I cast out devils by Beelzebub.

F And if I cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God cast out devils, then is the kingdom of God come upon you.

G how can one enter into the house of the strong man, and spoil his goods, except be first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

H that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

I And I say unto you, Every sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men; but the blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven.

J And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever shall speak against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, nor in that which is to come.

K Either make the tree good, and its fruit good; or make the tree corrupt, and its fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by its fruit.

L For there is no good tree that bringeth forth corrupt fruit; nor again a corrupt tree that bringeth forth good fruit.

M Ye offspring of vipers, how can ye, being evil, speak good things?

ERV margin: Greek demons Or in Some ancient authorities read unto you men Or age

H With the first half of this saying, compare the last verse of §78 portion I.
A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. (§38 § = Mt 7:18)
M By their fruits ye shall know them. (§38 §§ = Mt 7:20)
N For another record of these terms as from Jesus, compare §139. For the record of the use of them by John the Baptist, compare §17.
Matt 12

O for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. The good
man out of his good treasure bringeth forth good things: and the evil man out of his evil treasure bringeth forth evil things.

P And I say unto you, that every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgement. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned.

Q Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees answered him, saying, 'Master, we would see a sign from thee.'

R But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet:

S for as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

T Compare portion V below

Luke

O good man out of the good treasure of his heart bringeth forth that which is good; and the evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth that which is evil: for out of the abundance of the heart his mouth speaketh. (§380-5)

Q Compare portion D above

Luke 11

R And when the multitudes were gathering together unto him, he began to say, This generation is an evil generation: it seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah.

S For even as Jonah became a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.

T The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, and shall condemn them: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, she is greater than Solomon is here.

U The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, she is greater than Jonah is here.

V The queen of the south shall rise up in

ERV margin: 1 Or Teacher 2 Greek sea-monster 3 Greek more than

OT references: Mt 12:30 and Lk 11:30 = Jonah 3:1-4 Mt 12:40 = Jonah 1:17 Mt 12:42 and Lk 11:31 = 1 Kings 10:1-3

Q And the Pharisees and Saddu- cees came, and tempting him asked him to shew them a sign from heaven.

R But he answered and said unto them, . . . An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of Jonah.

And he left them, and departed. (§68 A-B = Mt 16:1-4)
Matt 12

the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a greater than Solomon is here.

w But the unclean spirit, when he is gone out of the man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest, and findeth it not. Then saith, I will return into my house whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more evil than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man becometh worse than the first.

x Even so shall it be also unto this evil generation.

Luke 11

w The unclean spirit when he is gone out of the man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest; and finding none, he saith, I will turn back unto my house whence I came out. And when he is come, he findeth it swept and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh with him seven other spirits more evil than himself; and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man becometh worse than the first. (§861)
CHAPTER VIII
THE MYSTERY OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD

§ 46 BASIS OF REAL RELATIONSHIP TO JESUS*

MATT 12:46-50
A While he was yet speaking to the multitudes, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, seeking to speak to him.
B And one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, seeking to speak to thee.
C But he answered and said unto him that told him,
D Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren!
E For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, he is my brother, and sister, and mother.

MARK 3:31-35
A And there came his mother and his brethren; and, standing without, they sent unto him, calling him. And a multitude was sitting about him;
B and they say unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.
C And he answered them, saying,
D Who is my mother and my brethren? And looking round on them which sat round about him, he saith, Behold, my mother and my brethren!
E For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

LUKE 8:19-21
A And there came to him his mother and brethren, and they could not come at him for the crowd.
B And it was told him, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.
C But he answered and said unto them,

§ 47 DISCOURSE ON THE KINGDOM OF GOD

MATT 13:1-53
A On that day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side. And there were gathered unto him great multitudes, so that he entered into a boat, and sat; and all the multitude stood on the beach. And he spake to them many things in parables, saying,
B Behold, the sower went forth to sow; and as he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the birds came and devoured them:
C and others fell upon the rocky places, where they had not much earth: and straightway they sprang up, because they had

MARK 4:1-34
A And again he began to teach by the sea side. And there is gathered unto him a very great multitude, so that he entered into a boat, and sat in the sea; and all the multitude were by the sea on the land. And he taught them many things in parables, and said unto them in his teaching,
B Hearken: Behold, the sower went forth to sow: and it came to pass, as he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the birds came and devoured it.
C And other fell on the rocky ground, where it had not much earth; and straightway it sprang up, because it had no deepness of

LUKE 8:4-18
A And when a great multitude came together, and they of every city resorted unto him, he spake by a parable: Compare §27 verses 1-3
B The sower went forth to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden under foot, and the birds of the heaven devoured it.
C And other fell on the rock; and as soon as it grew, it withered away, because it had no moisture.

ERV margin: * Some ancient authorities omit verse 47
* With these accounts compare the record in §87

53
Matt 13
no depthness of earth: and 6
when the sun was risen, they
were scorched; and because
they had no root, they
withered away.

D And others 7
fell upon the thorns; and the
thorns grew up, and choked
them:

E and others fell upon 8
the good ground, and yielded
fruit, some a hundredfold,
some sixty, some thirty.

Mark 4
earth: and when the sun was 6
risen, it was scorched; and be-
cause it had no root, it
withered away.

D And other 7
fell among the thorns, and
the thorns grew up, and
choked it, and it yielded no
fruit.

E And others fell into 6
the good ground, and yielded
fruit, growing up and increas-
ing; and brought forth, thirty-
fold, and sixtyfold, and a
hundredfold.

Luke 8
D And other fell amidst the 7
thorns; and the thorns grew
with it, and choked it.

E and other fell into the
good ground, and grew, and
brought forth fruit a hun-
dredfold.

\[\text{ERV margin: x Some ancient authorities add here, and in verse 43, to hear: as in Mark 4:9 and Luke 8:8}\]

\[\text{OT references: Mt 13:13-15 and Mk 4:13 and Lk 8:10 = Isaiah 6:9-10}\]

\[\text{f} \quad \text{He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. (§41 H = Lk 14:15)}\]

\[\text{f} \quad \text{Compare portion s below and §48 M}\]

\[\text{f} \quad \text{He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. (§104 f = Lk 14:15)}\]
Matt 13

And he saith unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how shall ye know all the parables?

And the sower sowed the word of God. And those by the way side are they that have heard; and straightway receive it with joy; and they have no root in themselves, but endure for a while; then, when tribulation or persecution ariseth because of the word, straightway they stumble.

And others are they that are sown among the thorns; these are they that have heard the word, and the cares of this world, and the deceitfulness of riches, and the lusts of other things entering in, choke the word, and it becometh unfruitful.

And he that was sown upon the good ground, this is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

Mark 4

L And he saith unto them, Know ye not this parable? and how shall ye know all the parables?

M The sower sowed the word of God. And those by the way side are they that have heard; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word from their heart, that they may not believe and be saved.

And those on the rock are they which, when they have heard the word, receive it with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

Luke 8

L Now the parable is this:

M The seed is the word of God. And those by the way side are they that have heard; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word from their heart, that they may not believe and be saved.

And those on the rock are they which, when they have heard the word, receive it with joy; and these have no root, which for a while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

And he that was sown upon the good ground, this is he that heareth the word, and understandeth it; which beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

ERV margin: 1 Or age
§ 47
RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

MATTHEW 13
Mark 4
Luke 8

was anythin made secret, but that it should come to light.
If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear.

And he said unto them, Take heed what ye hear:
with what measure ye mete it shall be measured unto you: and more shall be given unto you.

For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath.

not be known and come to light.

Take heed therefore how ye hear:

Compare portion H above

§ 48 DISCOURSE ON THE KINGDOM OF GOD (concluded)

A Another parable he befores them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man that sowed good seed in his field: but while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares also among the wheat, and went away. But when the blade sprang up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also.

And the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst thou not sow good seed in thy field? whence then hath it tares? And he said unto them, An enemy hath done this. And the servants say unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? But he saith, Nay; lest haply while ye gather up the tares, ye root up the wheat with them.

Let both grow together until the harvest:

and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather up first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

D And he said, So is the kingdom of God, as if a man should cast seed upon the earth; and should sleep and rise night and day, and the

ERV margin: 1 Or seemeth to have 2 Or darnel 3 Greek bondservants 4 Greek A man that is an enemy

s Compare portion s above and attached references
v And with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured unto you. (§138 v = Mt 7:2)
v For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away. (§136 v = Mt 25:29)
v For with what measure ye mete it shall be measured to you again. (§138 v = Lk 6:38)
v I say unto you, that unto every one that hath shall be given; but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away from him. (§133 v = Lk 19:26)

56
MATTHEW 13

seed should spring up and
 grow, he knoweth not how.
The earth

beareth fruit of
herself; first the blade, then
the ear, then the full corn
in the ear. But when the
fruit is ripe, straightway he
putteth forth the sickle, be-
cause the harvest is come.

MARK 4

And he said, How shall we
 liken the kingdom of God?
or in what parable shall we
set it forth? It is like a
grain of mustard seed, which,
when it is sown upon the
earth, though it be less than
all the seeds that are upon
the earth, yet when it is sown,
growth up, and becometh
greater than all the herbs, and
putteth out great branches;
so that the birds of the heaven
can lodge under the shadow
thereof.

LUKE

He said therefore, Unto
what is the kingdom of God
like? and whereunto shall I
 liken it? It is like unto a

grain of mustard seed, which
a man took, and cast into his
own garden; and it grew, and
became a tree; and the birds
of the heaven lodged in the
branches thereof.

F Another parable set he be-
fore them, saying, The king-
dom of heaven is like unto
a grain of mustard seed, which
a man took, and sowed in his
field: which indeed is less
than all seeds; but when it is
grown, it is greater than the
herbs, and becometh a tree, so
that the birds of the heaven
come and lodge in the
branches thereof.

G All these things spake he
unto them; The kingdom of
heaven is like unto leaven,
which a woman took, and hid
in three measures of meal,
till it was all leavened.

H And again he said, Whereun-
to shall I liken the kingdom of
God? It is like unto leaven,
which a woman took and hid in
three measures of meal, till it
was all leavened. (§90 AB)

I that it might be ful-
filled which was spoken by
the prophet, saying,
I will open my mouth in
parables;
I will utter things hidden
from the foundation of
the world.

J Then he left the multi-
tudes, and went into the
house: and his disciples came
unto him, saying, Explain
unto us the parable of the
tares of the field.

K And he answered and said,
He that soweth the good seed
is the Son of man; and the
field is the
the world; and the good
seed, these are the sons of the
kingdom; and the tares are
the sons of the evil one; and

ERV margin: 1 Or yieldeth 2 Or alloweth 3 Or sendeth forth 4 Greek As unto 5 The word in the
Greek denotes the Hebrew seah, a measure containing nearly a peck and a half 6 Or through 7 Many ancient
authorities omit of the world

Psalms 78:2

57
Matt 13

the enemy that sowed them

is the devil:

L 1

and the harvest

is the end of the world; and

the reapers are angels. As

therefore the tares are

gathered up and burned with

fire; so shall it be in the end

of the world. The Son of

man shall send forth his

angels, and they shall gather

out of his kingdom all things

that cause stumbling, and

them that do iniquity, and

shall cast them into the fur-
nace of fire: there shall be

the weeping and gnashing of

teeth. Then shall the right-
ceous shine forth as the sun

in the kingdom of their Father.

M

He that hath ears, let him

hear.

N The kingdom of heaven is

like unto a treasure hidden in

the field; which a man found,

and hid; and in his joy he

goeth and selleth all that he

hath, and buyeth that field.

O Again, the kingdom of

heaven is like unto a man that

is a merchant seeking goodly

pearls: and having found one

pearl of great price, he went

and sold all that he had, and

bought it.

P Again, the kingdom of

heaven is like unto a net,

that was cast into the sea, and

gathered of every kind: which,

when it was filled, they drew

up on the beach; and they sat

down, and gathered the good

into vessels, but the bad they

cast away.

Q So shall it be in

the end of the world: the

angels shall come forth, and

sever the wicked from among

the righteous, and shall cast

them into the furnace of fire:

ERV margin: 1 Or the consummation of the age 2 Or for joy thereof 3 Greek drag-net

OF references: Mt 13:43 = Daniel 12:3

L And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§39 D = Mt 8:11-12)

L There shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth without. And they shall come from the east and west, and from the north and south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. (§100 G = Lk 13:28-29)

L And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§48 Q = Mt 13:50)

L And cast him out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§249 B = Mt 22:15)

L And shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§256 D = Mt 24:51)

L And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§136 Q = Mt 25:30)

M Compare §47 F and attached references

Q Compare portion L above and attached references

58
THE MYSTERY OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD

Matt 13
there shall be the weeping and
gnashing of teeth.

r Have ye understood all these things? They say unto
him, Yea. And he said unto them, Therefore every scribe
who hath been made a disci-
ple to the kingdom of heaven
is like unto a man that is a
householder, which bringeth
forth out of his treasure things
new and old.

s And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these parables, he departed thence.

§ 49 BASIS OF REAL RELATIONSHIP TO JESUS*

Matt 12:46–50
A While he was yet speaking to the multitudes, behold, his mother and his brethren stood without, seeking to speak to him.
B And one said unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren stand without, seeking to speak to thee.
C But he answered and said unto him that told him.
D Who is my mother? and who are my brethren? And he stretched forth his hand towards his disciples, and said, Behold, my mother and my brethren!
E For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, he is my brother, and sister, and mother. (§48 A–E)

Mark 3:31–35
A And there came his mother and his brethren; and, standing without, they sent unto him, calling him. And a multitude was sitting about him;
B and they say unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without seek for thee.
C And he answered them, and said, He answered them, and said,
D Who is my mother and my brethren? And looking round about him, he saith, Behold, my mother and my brethren!
E For whosoever shall do the will of God, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother. (§48 A–E)

Luke 8:19–21
A And there came to him his mother and brethren, and they could not come at him for the crowd.
B And it was told him, Thy mother and thy brethren stand without, desiring to see thee.
C But he answered and said unto them,

* With these accounts compare the record in 287
CHAPTER IX

THE PLACE OF FAITH IN THE WORK OF JESUS

§ 50 "HAVE YE NOT YET FAITH?"

($25+)$ Matt 8:18-27

A Now when Jesus saw great multitude about him, he gave
commandment to depart unto the other side.

B And there came a scribe, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest.
And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and
the birds of the heaven have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his
head. And another of the disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury
my father. But Jesus saith unto him, Follow me; and
leave the dead to bury their own dead.

C And when he was entered into a boat, his disciples followed him.

D And behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the boat was covered with the
waves: but he was asleep. And they came to him, and awoke him, saying, Save, Lord; we perish.

E And he saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith?

F Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and
there was a great calm.

G Compare portion E above

H And the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this,

Mark 4:35-41

A And on that day, when even was come, he said unto
them, Let us go over unto the other side.

B And there ariseth a great storm of wind, and the
waves beat into the boat, insomuch that the boat was now
filling. And he himself was in the stern, asleep on the
cushion: and they awoke him, and say unto him, Master, carest thou not that we perish?

C And leaving the multitude, they take him with them, even as he was, in the
boat. And other boats were with him.

D And there sailed he asleep: and
there came down a storm of wind on the lake; and they
were filling with water, and were in jeopardy. And they came to him, and awoke him,
saying, Master, master, we perish.

E Compare portion G below

F And he awoke, and rebuked the
wind, and said unto the sea, Peace, be still. And the wind ceased, and there was a
great calm.

G And he said unto them, Why are ye fearful? have ye not yet faith?

H And they feared exceedingly, and said one to another, Who then is this, that even

Luke 8:22-25

A Now it came to pass on one of those days, that he entered
into a boat, himself and his disciples; and he said unto
them, Let us go over unto the other side of the lake:

B And as they went in the way, a certain man said unto
him, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus
said unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the heaven
have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his
head. And he said unto another, Follow me. But he
said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. But he
said unto him, Leave the dead to bury their own dead; and go thou and publish abroad the
kingdom of God. (§81 AB)

C And they launched forth.

D But as they sailed he fell asleep: and
there came down a storm of wind on the lake; and they
were filling with water, and were in jeopardy. And they came to him, and awoke him,
saying, Master, master, we perish.

E Compare portion G below

F And he awoke, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water: and they
ceased, and there was a calm.

G And he said unto them, Where is your faith?

H And being afraid they marvelled, saying one to another, Who

ERV margin: 1 Greek one scribe 2 Or Teacher 3 Greek lodging-places
MATTHEW 8
that even the winds and the
sea obey him?

MARK 4
the wind and the sea obey
him?

LUKE 8
then is this, that he com-
mmandeth even the winds and
the water, and they obey
him?

§ 51
ATTITUDE OF THE Gerasenes

MATTHEW 8:28–34
A And when he was come to
the other side of the country of the Gadarenes,
B there met him two possessed with
devils, coming forth out of the tombs,
c exceeding fierce, so
that no man could pass by
that way.

MARK 5:1–20
A And they came to the
other side of the sea, into the
country of the Gerasenes.
B And when he was come out
of the boat, straightway there
met him out of the tombs a
man with an unclean spirit,
who had his dwelling in the
tombs:
c and no man could
any more bind him, no, not
with a chain; because that he
had been often bound with
fetters and chains, and the
chains had been rent asunder
by him, and the fetters broken
in pieces: and no man had
strength to tame him. And
always, night and day, in the
tombs and in the mountains,
he was crying out, and cutting
himself with stones.

LUKE 8:26–39
A And they arrived at the
country of the Gerasenes,
which is over against Galilee.
B And when he was come
forth upon the land, there met
him a certain man out of the
city, who had devils; and
for a long time he had worn
no clothes, and abode not in
any house, but in the tombs.
c Compare portion F below

D And behold, they cried out,
saying, What have we
to do with thee, thou Son
of God? art thou come hither
to torment us before the time?

D And when he saw Jesus from afar,
he ran and worshipped him;
and crying out with a loud voice,
he said, What have I to do
with thee, Jesus, thou Son
of the Most High God? I
adjure thee by God, torment
me not.

E For he said unto him, Come forth,
thou unclean spirit, out of the man.

F Compare portion C above

G And he asked him, What is thy name? And he saith unto him, My name is Legion;
for we are many. And he besought him
much that he would not send them away
out of the country.

H Now there was afar off from
them a herd of many swine
feeding. And the devils
besought him, saying, If thou

H Now there was there
a herd of many swine feeding
on the mountain: and they
intreated him that he would

ERV margins: 1 Or demons 2 Many ancient authorities read Gergesenes; others, Gadarenes: and so in
verse 37 3 Greek demons 4 Or of a long time 5 Greek demon 62
THE PLACE OF FAITH IN THE WORK OF JESUS § 52

Matt 8

cast us out, send us away into the herd of swine. And\textsuperscript{13} he said unto them, Go.

Mark 5

him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. And he gave them\textsuperscript{13} leave.

Luke 8

give them leave to enter into them. And he gave them leave.

I And they came out, and went into the swine: and behold, the whole herd rushed down the steep into the sea, and perished in the waters.

J And\textsuperscript{13} they that fed them fled, and went away into the city, and told everything, and what was befallen to them that were possessed with devils. And\textsuperscript{14} behold, all the city came out to meet Jesus:

K And they came to\textsuperscript{15} Jesus, and behold him that was possessed with devils sitting, clothed and in his right mind, even him that had the legion: and they were afraid. And they that saw\textsuperscript{16} it declared unto them how it befell him that was possessed with devils, and concerning the swine.

L And they began\textsuperscript{17} to beseech him to depart from their borders.

M And as he was\textsuperscript{18} entering into the boat, he that had been possessed with devils besought him that he might be with him. And he\textsuperscript{19} suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go to thy house unto thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and how he had mercy on thee. And\textsuperscript{20} he went his way, and began to publish in Decapolis how great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel.

§ 52 "FEAR NOT, ONLY BELIEVE"

Matt 9:1, (§31-+) 18-26

A And he entered into a boat, and crossed over, and came into his own city. (+§ 29)

B While he spake these things unto them, behold, there came a ruler, and wor-

Mark 5: 21-43

A And when Jesus had\textsuperscript{21} crossed over again in the boat unto the other side, a great multitude was gathered unto him: and he was by the sea.

B And there cometh one of the rulers of the synagogue, Jairus by name; and seeing

Luke 8: 40-56

A And as Jesus returned, the multitude welcomed him; for they were all waiting for him.

B And behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and

ERV margin: 1 Or demoniacs 2 Greek demons 3 Or the demoniac 4 Or saved 5 Greek one ruler
Matt 9

shipped him, saying, My daughter is even now dead: but come and lay thy hand upon her, and she shall live.

C And Jesus arose, and followed him, and so did his disciples.

D And behold, a woman, who had an issue of blood twelve years, came behind him, and touched the border of his garment: for she said, If I do but touch his garment, I shall be made whole.

x Compare portion K below

Matt 9

Mark 5

him, he falleth at his feet, and beseecheth him much, saying, My little daughter is at the point of death: I pray thee, that thou come and lay thy hands on her, that she may be made whole, and live.

C And he went with him; and a great multitude followed him, and they thronged him.

D And a woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years, and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse, having heard the things concerning Jesus, came in the crowd behind, and touched his garment. For she said, If I but touch his garments, I shall be made whole.

E And straightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and she felt in her body that she was healed of her plague.

F And straightway Jesus, perceiving in himself that the power proceeding from him had gone forth, turned him about in the crowd, and said, Who touched my garments?

G And his disciples said unto him, Thou seest the multitude thronging thee, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

x Compare portion H below

Luke 8

he fell down at Jesus' feet, and besought him to come into his house; for he had an only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying.

C But as he went the multitudes thronged him.

D And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, and could not be healed of any, came behind him, and touched the border of his garment:

E And immediately the issue of her blood stanched.

F Jesus said, Who is it that touched me?

x Compare portion I below

John 11

But Jesus, turning and seeing her said, Daughter, be of good cheer; thy faith hath made thee whole.

K And the woman was made whole from that hour.

J And he said unto her, Daughter, thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace, and be whole of thy plague.

K Compare portion E above

L While he yet spake, they came from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying,

L While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's house, saying,
Matt 9
Thy daughter is dead; why troublest thou the Master any further?

Mark 5
M But Jesus said, Behold the word spoken, saith unto the ruler of the synagogue, Fear not, only believe.
N And he suffered no man to follow with him, save Peter, and James, and John the brother of James.
O Compare portion Q below

Luke 8
M But Jesus hearkening it, answered him, Fear not: only believe, and she shall be made whole.
N And when he came to the house, he suffered not any man to enter in with him, save Peter, and John, and James, and the father of the maiden and her mother.
O And all were weeping, and bewailing her: but he said, Weep not; for she is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn, knowing that she was dead.

P And when Jesus came into the ruler's house, and saw the fluteplayers, and the crowd making a tumult, he said. Give place: for the damsel is not dead, but sleepeth. And they laughed him to scorn.

Q But when the crowd was put forth, he entered in, and took her by the hand; and the damsel arose.

T And the fame went forth into all that land.

§ 53  "BELIEVE YE THAT I AM ABLE?"

Matt 9:27–34

A And as Jesus passed by from thence, two blind men followed him, crying out, and saying, Have mercy on us, thou son of David. And when he was come into the house, the blind men came to him: and Jesus saith unto them, Believe ye that I am able to do this? They say unto him, Yea, Lord. Then touched he their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it done unto you. And their eyes were opened.

A For an account in Matt-Mark-Luke of similar general content, compare §121

ERV margin: 1 Or Teacher 2 Or overhearing 3 Or saved 4 Greek this fame
And Jesus strictly charged them, saying, See that no man know it. But they went forth, and spread abroad his fame in all that land.

And as they went forth, behold, there was brought to him a dumb man possessed with a devil. And when the devil was cast out, the dumb man spake: and the multitudes marvelled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel. But the Pharisees said, By the prince of the devils devils casteth he out devils. (+§55)

§ 54 "BECAUSE OF THEIR UNBELIEF"

(Matt 13:54–58)

A And coming into his own country he taught them in their synagogue,

B For an account in Matt-Mark-Luke of similar general content, compare §45 ABC

(Mark 6:1–6a)

A And he went out from thence; and he came into his own country; and his disciples follow him. And when the sabbath was come, he began to teach in the synagogue:

B For an account in Matt-Mark-Luke of similar general content, compare §45 ABC


A And he came to Nazareth, where he had been brought up: and he entered, as his custom was, into the synagogue on the sabbath day, and stood up to read.

B And there was delivered unto him the book of the prophet Isaiah. And he opened the book, and found the place where it was written,

The Spirit of the Lord is upon me,

Because he anointed me to preach good tidings to the poor: He hath sent me to proclaim release to the captives, And recovering of sight to the blind, To set at liberty them that are bruised, To proclaim the acceptable year of the Lord.

And he closed the book, and gave it back to the attendant, and sat down: and the eyes of all in the synagogue were fastened on him. And he began to say to them, To-day hath this scripture been fulfilled in your ears.

C And all bare him witness, and wondered at the words of grace which proceeded out of his mouth:

ERV margin: Or sternly Greek demon Or In. Greek demons Or a roll Or roll Or roll

Wherefore 8 Or the gospel 9 Greek powers 10 Some ancient authorities insert the

OT references: Lk 4:18–19 = Isaiah 61:1–2

66
Matt 13
they not all with us?
E Whence then hath this man all these things?
F And57 they were offended in him.

Mark 6
E Compare portion C above
F And they were offended in him.

Luke 4
G And he said unto them, Doubtless ye will say unto me this parable. Physician, heal thyself: whatsoever we have heard done at Capernaum, do also here in thine own country.
H And he said, Verily I say unto you, No prophet is acceptable in his own country.

I But of a truth I say unto you, There were many widows in Israel in the days of Elias, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when there came a great famine over all the land;
and unto none of them was Elijah sent, but only to Zarephath, in the land of Sidon, unto a woman that was a widow.
And there were many lepers in Israel in the time of Elias the prophet; and none of them was cleansed, but only Naaman the Syrian.

J And he did not many58 mighty works there because of their unbelief. (+§ 58)
J And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief.

K Compare portion F above
K Compare portion F above

ERV margin:
1 Greek cause to stumble
2 Greek Sarepta
3 Greek powers
4 Greek power

OT references:
Lk 4:25 = 1 Kings 17:1 and 18:1-2
Lk 4:36 = 1 Kings 17:8-9
Lk 4:27 = 2 Kings 5:1, 14

67
CHAPTER X
TOUR OF THE DISCIPLES AND RESULTANT EVENTS

§ 55 JESUS TOURS IN GALILEE

(Matt 9:35) Mark 6:5b
A And Jesus went about all the cities and the villages, teaching in their synagogues, 
B and preaching the gospel of the kingdom, and healing all manner of disease and all manner of sickness.

(Mark 6:6b) A And he went round about the villages teaching.

§ 56 DISCOURSE ON THE MISSION OF THE DISCIPLES

Matt 9:36—11:1
A But when he saw the multitude, he was moved with compassion for them, because they were distressed and scattered, as sheep not having a shepherd.
B Then saith he unto them, The harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few. Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest.
C And he called unto him his twelve disciples, and gave them authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of disease and all manner of sickness.
D Now the names of the twelve apostles are these: The first, Simon, who is called Peter, and Andrew his brother; James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother; Philip, and Bartholomew; Thomas, and Matthew the publican; James the son of Alphaeus, and Thaddaeus; Simon the Cananean, and Judas Iscariot, who also betrayed him.

Mark 6:7-13
A And he came forth and saw a great multitude, and he had compassion on them, because they were as sheep not having a shepherd. (§60B)
B And he said unto them, The harvest is plenteous, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest. (§82B)
C And he called unto him the seven, and began to send them forth by two and two; and he gave them authority over the unclean spirits;
D And he appointed twelve, and

Luke 9:1-6
A And he called his disciples: and he chose from them twelve, whom also he named apostles: Simon, whom he also named Peter, and Andrew his brother, and James and John, and Philip and Bartholomew, and Matthew and Thomas, and James the son of Alphaeus, and Simon which was called the Zealot, and Judas the son of James, and Judas Iscariot, which was the traitor. (§35BC)

ERV margin: 1 Greek δήμος 2 Some ancient authorities add whom also he named apostles: see Luke 6:13 3 Some ancient authorities insert and he appointed twelve 4 Or Zealot: see Luke 6:15 and Acts 1:13 5 Or, brother: see Jude 1, 6 Or delivered him up: and so always

OT references: Mt 9:36 and Mk 6:34 = Numbers 27:17 and Ezekiel 34:3

B Compare the latter half of the Matthew record in §26D
C Now after these things the Lord appointed seventy others, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself was about to come. (§26 A = Lk 10:1)
MATT 10

Jesus sent forth, and charged them, saying,

Go not into any way of the Gentiles, and enter not into any city of the Samaritans: but go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, cast out devils: freely ye received, freely give.

Get you no gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses; no wallet for your journey, neither two coats, nor shoes, nor staff:

For the labourer is worthy of his food.

And into whatsoever city or village ye shall enter, search out who is in it worthy; and there abide till ye go forth.

And as ye enter into the house, salute it. And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

And whatsoever place shall not receive you, nor hear your words, as ye go forth out of that house or that city, shake off the dust of your feet.

Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgment, than for that city.

Howbeit I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgement, than for thee. (KJV)

Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.

---

MARK 6

he charged them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only; no bread, no wallet, no money in their purse; but to go shod with sandals: and, said he, put not on two coats.

And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staff, nor wallet, nor bread, nor money; neither have two coats.

KX

And whatsoever place shall not receive you, and they hear you not, as ye go forth thence, shake off the dust that is under your feet for a testimony unto them.

For the labourer is worthy of his hire. (KJV)

And into whatsoever house ye enter, there abide, and thence depart.

And into whatsoever house ye enter, there abide, and thence depart.

And into whatsoever house ye enter, there abide, and thence depart.

I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom, than for that city. (KJV)

Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs in the midst of wolves. (KJV)


§ 57  DISCOURSE ON THE MISSION OF THE DISCIPLES (concluded)

MATT 10
A But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to councils, and in their synagogues they shall scourge you; yes, and before governors and kings shall ye be brought for my sake, for a testimony to them and to the Gentiles.

Then shall they deliver you up:

up unto tribulation, (§134G) ⁹

B Compare portion F below

Compare §134 portion N

c cashier But when they deliver you up, be not anxious how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speaketh, but the Spirit of your Father that speaketh in you.

D And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father his child: and children shall rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death.

and shall: ⁶

e And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved.

and ye shall be hated:

of all the nations for my name's sake. But he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved. (§134E-M)

f But when they persecute you in this city, flee into the next: for verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone through the cities of Israel, till the Son of man be come.

g A disciple is not above his master, nor a servant above his lord. It is enough for the disciple that he be as his master, and the servant as his lord. If they have called the master of the house Beelzebub, how much more shall they call them of his household!

MARK
A But take ye heed to your selves: for they shall deliver you up to council, and in synagogues ye shall be beaten; and before governors and kings shall ye stand for my sake, for a testimony unto them.

B And the gospel must first be preached unto all the nations.

C And when they lead you to judgement, and deliver you up, be not anxious beforehand what ye shall speak: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speaketh, but the Holy Ghost.

D And brother shall deliver up brother to death, and the father his child: and children shall rise up against parents, and cause them to be put to death.

E And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end, the same shall be saved. (§134E-M)

F Compare portion B above

g The disciple is not above his master: but every one when he is perfected shall be as his master. (§3B)

LUKE
A But before all these things, they shall lay their hands on you, and shall persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons, bringing you before kings and governors for my name's sake. It shall turn unto you for a testimony.

B And the gospel must first be preached unto all the nations.

C Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate beforehand how or what you shall answer, for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to withstand or gainsay.

D But ye shall be delivered even by parents, and brethren, and kinsfolk, and friends; and some of you shall they cause to be put to death.

E And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake. And not a hair of your head shall perish. In your patience ye shall win your souls. (§134E-M)

ERV margin: 1 Greek you are being brought 2 Or put them to death 3 Or shall they put to death 4 Or lives 5 Or teacher 6 Greek bondservant 7 Greek Beelzebul: and so elsewhere

c And when they bring you before the synagogues, and the rulers, and the authorities, be not anxious how or what ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: for the Holy Spirit shall teach you in that hour what ye ought to say. (§91:1 = Lk 12:11-12)
Matt 10

Mk

Mark

Luke

Matthew

Fear them not therefore: for there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; and hid, that shall not be known. What I tell you in the darkness, speak ye in the light; and what ye hear in the ear, proclaim upon the housetops.

And be not afraid of them which kill the body: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and not one of them shall fall on the ground without your Father: but the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore; ye are of more value than many sparrows.

Every one therefore who shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven.

Think not that I came to send peace on the earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I came to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law; and a man's foes shall be they of his own household.

He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and

For there is nothing hid, save that it should be manifested: neither was anything made secret, but that it should come to light. (§338 m = Mt 16:22)

For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then shall he rend unto every man according to his deeds. (§73 c = Mt 16:27)

For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and sinful generation, the Son of man also shall be ashamed of him, when he cometh in the glory of his Father with the holy angels. (§73 c = Mk 8:38)

For there is nothing hid, that shall not be made manifest: neither was anything made secret, that shall not be known and come to light. (§47 m = Lk 8:27)

For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in his own glory, and the glory of the Father, and of the holy angels. (§73 c = Lk 9:26)
Matt 10
he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

And he that doth not take his cross and follow after me, is not worthy of me.

Mark 6
And whosoever receiveth me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me. (§78 G)

Luke 9
and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.

Whosoever doth not bear his own cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. (Mt 10:35)  
Who soever shall seek to gain his life shall lose it: but who soever shall lose his life shall preserve it. (Lk 9:23–25)

He that receiveth you receiveth me; and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. (§78 G)

FATE OF JOHN THE BAPTIST

§ 58

At that season Herod the tetrarch heard the report concerning Jesus, and said unto his servants, This is John the Baptist; he is risen from the dead; and therefore do these powers work in him.

A And king Herod heard thereof; for his name had become known: and he said, John the Baptist is risen from the dead, and therefore do these powers work in him.

But others said, It is Elijah. And others said, It is a prophet, even as one of the prophets.

But Herod, when he heard thereof, said, John, whom I beheaded, he is risen.

And by some, that Elijah had appeared; and by others, that one of the old prophets was risen again.

And Herod said, John I beheaded: but who is this, about whom I hear such things? And he sought to see him.

ERV margin, 1 Or found, 2 Or soul, 3 Or lost, 4 Greek saw it alive, 5 Greek in name that ye are
6 Greek demons, 7 Some ancient authorities read they, 8 Greek the Baptist

If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

For whosoever would save his life shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake shall find it. (Mt 16:24–25)

If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

For whosoever would save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's shall save it. (Mk 8:34–35)
Matt 14  For
Herod had laid hold on John,
and bound him, and put him
in prison for the sake of Herodias,
his brother Philip's wife.
For John said unto him, It is not lawful for thee to have her.

Mark 6  For Herod himself had sent forth and laid hold upon John,
and bound him in prison for the sake of Herodias, his
brother Philip's wife: for he had married her. For John said unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.

Luke  D With many other exhorta-
tions therefore preached he the
good tidings unto the people; but Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his brother's wife, and for all the evil things which Herod had done, added yet this above all, that he shut up John in prison. (§17 R)

E And when he would have put him to death, he feared the multitude, because they counted him as a prophet.
E And Herodias set herself against him, and desired to kill him; and she could not; for Herod feared John, knowing that he was a righteous man and a holy, and kept him safe. And when he heard him, he was much perplexed; and he heard him gladly.
E And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birthday made a supper to his lords, and the high captains, and the chief men of Galilee; and when the daughter of Herodias herself came in and danced, she pleased Herod and them that sat at meat with him; and the king said unto the damsel, Ask of me whatsoever thou wilt, and I will give it thee. And he sware unto her, Whatsoever thou shalt ask of me, I will give it thee, unto the half of my kingdom.
E And she said, I will that thou forthwith give me in a charger the head of John the Baptist.
E And she went out, and said unto her mother, What shall I ask? And she said, The head of John the Baptist. And she came in straightway with haste unto the king, and asked, saying, I will that thou forthwith give me in a charger the head of John the Baptist.
E And the king was exceeding sorry; but for the sake of his oaths, and of them that sat at meat, he would not reject her. And straightway the king sent forth a soldier of his guard, and commanded to bring his head: and he went and beheaded him in the prison, and brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damsel; and the damsel gave it to her mother.

ERV margin: 1 Or the gospel 2 Many ancient authorities read did many things 3 Or military tribunes Greek chiliarchis 4 Some ancient authorities read his daughter Herodias 5 Or it 6 Greek the Baptist

OT references: Mt 14:4 and Mk 6:28 and Lk 3:19 = Leviticus 18:16 and 20:21

74
TOUR OF THE DISCIPLES AND RESULTANT EVENTS § 60

Matt 14
his disciples came, and took
up the corpse, and buried him;
and they went and told Jesus.

Mark 6
And when his dis-
ciples heard thereof, they came
and took up his corpse, and
laid it in a tomb.

§ 59 REPORT OF ASSOCIATES ON THEIR TOUR*

Mark 6:30-31
And the apostles gathered themselves together unto Je-
sus; and they told him all
things, whatsoever they had
done, and whatsoever they
had taught. And he said31
unto them, Come ye yourselves
apart into a desert place, and rest a while. For
there were many coming and
going, and they had no leisure
so much as to eat.

Luke 9:10
And the apostles, when they
were returned, declared unto
him what things they had
done.

§ 60 TEACHING AND FEEDING THE MULTITUDE

Matt 14:13-23
A. Now when Jesus heard of it, he withdrew from thence to a
boat, to a desert place apart: and when the multitudes
heard thereof, they followed him on foot from the cities.

Mark 6:32-46
B. And he came forth, and saw a great multitude, and he
had compassion on them, and he
healed their sick.

C. And when the day was now far spent, his dis-
ciples came unto him, and
said, The place is desert, and the day is now far spent:
send them away, that they may go
into the villages, and buy themselves food.

D. But Jesus answered and said unto
them, Give ye them to eat. And they said17
unto him, We have here but five loaves, and two fishes.
And he said, Bring them hither to me.

Mark 6:33 ing, and many knew them, and
they ran there together on foot from all the cities, and
outwent them.

Luke 9:10-17
A. And he took them, and withdrew apart to a city called
Bethsaida. But the multitudes
perceiving it followed him:

B. And he welcomed them, and
spake to them of the king-
dom of God, and them that
had need of healing he healed.

ERV margin: 1 Or by land 2 The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence halfpenny

OT references: Mk 6:34 (Mt 9:36) = Numbers 27:17 and Ezekiel 34:5

B. But when he saw the multitudes, he was moved with compassion for them, because they were distressed and scat-
tered, as sheep not having a shepherd. (§59 = Mt 9:33)
Matt 14  
E Compare portion I below  
F And he commanded the multitudes to sit down on the grass;  
G And he took the five loaves, and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake the loaves; and he gave to the disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.  
H And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up that which remained over of the broken pieces, twelve baskets full.  
I And they that did eat were about five thousand men, beside women and children.  
J And straightway he constrained the disciples to enter into the boat, and to go before him unto the other side, till he should send the multitudes away.  
K And after he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into the mountain apart to pray.  

Mark 6  
E Compare portion I below  
F And he commanded them that all should sit down by companies upon the green grass. And they sat down in ranks, by hundreds, and by fifties.  
G And he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed, and brake the loaves; and he gave to the disciples to set before them; and the two fishes divided he among them all.  
H And they did all eat, and were filled. And they took up broken pieces, twelve baskets, and also of the fishes.  
I And they that ate were about five thousand men.  
J And straightway he constrained his disciples to enter into the boat, and to go before him unto the other side to Bethsaida, while he himself senteth the multitude away.  
K And after he had taken leave of them, he departed into the mountain to pray.  

Luke 9  
E For they were about five thousand men.  
F And he said unto his disciples, Make them sit down in companies, about fifty each. And they did so, and made them all sit down.  
G And he took the five loaves and the two fishes, and looking up to heaven, he blessed them, and brake; and gave to the disciples to set before the multitude before.  
H And they did eat, and were all filled: and there was taken up that which remained over to them of broken pieces, twelve baskets.  

§ 60  ACROSS THE SEA OF GALILEE  

Matt 14:22b-33  
A And when even was come, he was there alone. But the boat was now in the midst of the sea, distressed by the waves; for the wind was contrary. And in the fourth watch of the night he came unto them, walking upon the sea.  
B And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is an apparition; and they cried out for fear. But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid.  
C And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee upon the waters. And he said,  

Mark 6:47-52  
A And when even was come, the boat was in the midst of the sea, and he alone on the land. And seeing them distressed in rowing, for the wind was contrary unto them, about the fourth watch of the night he cometh unto them, walking on the sea;  
B and he would have passed by them: but they, when they saw him walking on the sea, supposed that it was an apparition, and cried out: for they all saw him, and were troubled. But he straightway spake with them, and saith unto them, Be of good cheer: it is I; be not afraid.

ERV margin:  
1 Greek recline  
2 Some ancient authorities read was many furlongs distant from the land
Come. And Peter went down from the boat, and walked upon the waters, to come to Jesus. But when he saw the wind, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried out, saying, Lord, save me. And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and took hold of him, and saith unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?

D And when they were gone up into the boat, the wind ceased. And they that were in the boat worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.

And he went up unto them into the boat; and the wind ceased: and they were sore amazed in themselves; for they understood not concerning the loaves, but their heart was hardened.

§ 62 MANY SICK BROUGHT TO JESUS

A And when they had crossed over, they came to the land, unto Gennesaret. And when the men of that place knew him, they sent into all that region round about, and brought unto him all that were sick;

A And when they had crossed over, they came to the land unto Gennesaret, and moored to the shore. And when they were come out of the boat, straightway the people knew him, and ran round about that whole region, and began to carry about on their beds those that were sick, where they heard he was.

B And wheresoever he entered, into villages, or into cities, or into the country, they laid the sick in the marketplaces,

C and they besought him that they might only touch the border of his garment: and as many as touched were made whole.
CHAPTER XI
DEMAND BY PHARISEES FOR CONFORMITY AND CREDENTIALS

§ 63 CONCERNING TRADITIONS ABOUT DEFILEMENT

MATT 15:1-20
A Then there come to Jesus from Jerusalem Pharisees and scribes,

MARK 7:1-23
A And there are gathered together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which had come from Jerusalem, and had seen that some of his disciples ate their bread with defiled, that is, unwashed, hands.

LUKE
A Compare §50 portion A

B For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands diligently, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders: and when they come from the marketplace, except they wash themselves, they eat not: and many other things there be, which they have received to hold, washings of cups, and pots, and brases vessels.

C And the Pharisees and the scribes ask him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat their bread with defiled hands?

D Compare portion G below

C saying, Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread.

D And he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God because of your tradition? For God said, Honour thy father and thy mother: and, He that speaketh evil of father or mother, let him die the death.

E But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, That wherewith thou mightest have been profited by me is given to God; he shall not honour his father. And ye have made void the word of God because of your tradition.

F Ye hypocrites, well did Isaiah prophesy of you, saying,

E Compare portion H below

F And he said unto them, Well did Isaiah prophesy of you hypocrites, as it is written,
Matt 15
This people honoureth me with their lips; But their heart is far from me. But in vain do they worship me, Teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men.

Mark 7
This people honoureth me with their lips, But their heart is far from me. But in vain do they worship me, Teaching as their doctrines the precepts of men.

Luke
Ye leave the commandment of God, and hold fast the tradition of men. And he said unto them, Full well do ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, He that speaketh evil of father or mother, let him die the death;

H Compare portion E above

ye say, If a man shall say to his father or his mother, That where with thou mightest have been profited by me is Corban, that is to say, Given to God; ye no longer suffer him to do aught for his father or his mother; making void the word of God by your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things ye do.

I And he called to him the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand: Not that which entereth into the mouth defileth the man; but that which proceedeth out of the mouth, this defileth the man.

J Then came the disciples, and said unto him, Knowest thou that the Pharisees were offended, when they heard this saying? But he answered and said, Every plant which my heavenly Father planted not, shall be rooted up. Let them alone: they are blind guides. And if the blind guide the blind, both shall fall into a pit.

K And Peter answered and said unto him, Declare unto us the parable. And he said, Are ye also even yet without understanding? Perceive ye not, that whatsoever goeth into the mouth passeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught?

K And when he was entered into the house from the multitude, his disciples asked of him the parable. And he said, saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Perceive ye not, that whatsoever from without goeth into the man, it cannot defile

ERV margin: 1 Or surely die 2 Many ancient authorities insert verse 16: If any man hath ears to hear, let him hear 3 Greek caused to stumble 4 Greek planting

OT references: Mt 15:8-9 and Mk 7:6-7 = Isaiah 29:13 Mk 7:10=compare page 79
Matt 15
But the things which proceed out of the mouth come forth out of the heart; and they defile the man. For out of the heart come forth evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, railings: these are the things which defile the man: but to eat with unwashed hands defileth not the man.

Mark 7
him; because it goeth not into his heart, but into his belly, and goeth out into the draught? This he said, making all meats clean.

And he said, That which proceedeth out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, evil thoughts proceed, fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries, covetings, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, railing, pride, foolishness: all these evil things proceed from within, and defile the man.

§ 64 WITHDRAWAL TOWARD TYRE AND SIDON

Matt 15:21-28
A And Jesus went out thence, and withdrew into the parts of Tyre and Sidon.

B And behold, a Canaanite woman came out from those borders, and cried, saying, Have mercy on me, O Lord, thou son of David; my daughter is grievously vexed with a devil.

C But he answered and said, I was not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

D But he answered and said, I was not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel.

E But she came and said, Lord, help me. And he answered and said, It is not meet to take the children’s bread and cast it to the dogs. But she said, Yea, Lord: for even the dogs eat of the crumbs which fall from their masters’ table.

F Then Jesus answered and said unto her, O woman, great is thy faith: be it done unto thee even as thou wilt. And her daughter was healed from that hour.

Mark 7:24-30
A And from thence he arose and went away into the borders of Tyre and Sidon. And he entered into a house, and would have no man know it: and he could not be hid.

B But straightway a woman, whose little daughter had an unclean spirit, having heard of him, came and fell down at his feet. Now the woman was a Greek, a Syrophcenician by race. And she besought him that he would cast forth the devil out of her daughter.

D And he said unto her, Let the children first be filled:

E for it is not meet to take the children’s bread and cast it to the dogs. But she answered and said, Yea, Lord: even the dogs under the table eat of the children’s crumbs.

F And he said unto her, For this saying go thy way; the devil is gone out of thy daughter. And she went away unto her house, and found the child laid upon the bed, and the devil gone out.
§ 65 RETURN JOURNEY THROUGH DECAPOLIS

Matt 15:29a
And Jesus departed thence, and came nigh unto the sea of Galilee.

Mark 7:31
And again he went out from the borders of Tyre, and came through Sidon unto the sea of Galilee, through the midst of the borders of Decapolis.

§ 66 THE DEAF AND DUMB MAN

Mark 7:32-37
A And they bring unto him one that was deaf, and had an impediment in his speech; and they beseech him to lay his hand upon him. And he took him aside from the multitude privately, and put his fingers into his ears, and he spat, and touched his tongue; and looking up to heaven, he sighed, and saith unto him, Ephphatha, that is, Be opened. And his ears were opened, and the bond of his tongue was loosed, and he spake plain.
B And he charged them that they should tell no man: but the more he charged them, so much the more a great deal they published it.
C And they were beyond measure astonished, saying, He hath done all things well: he maketh even the deaf to hear, and the dumb to speak.

§ 67 HEALING AND FEEDING THE MULTITUDE

Matt 15:29b-39
A And he went up into the mountain, and sat there. And there came unto him great multitudes, having with them the lame, blind, dumb, maimed, and many others, and they cast them down at his feet; and he healed them:
B insomuch that the multitude wondered, when they saw the dumb speaking, the maimed whole, and the lame walking, and the blind seeing: and they glorified the God of Israel.
C And Jesus called unto him his disciples, and said, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days and have nothing to eat: and I would not send them away fasting,

Mark 8:1-10
A In those days, when there was again a great multitude, and they had nothing to eat,
B Compare §66 portion C
C he called unto him his disciples, and saith unto them, I have compassion on the multitude, because they continue with me now three days, and have nothing to eat: and if I send them away fasting
MATT 15

lest haply they faint in the way.

D And the disciples say unto him, Whence should we have so many loaves in a desert place, as to fill so great a multitude? And Jesus saith unto them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven, and a few small fishes.

E And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground;

F and he took the seven loaves and the fishes; and he gave thanks and brake, and gave to the disciples, and the disciples to the multitudes.

G Compare portion D above

H And they did all eat, and were filled: and they took up that which remained over of the broken pieces, seven baskets full.

I And they that did eat were four thousand men, beside women and children.

J And he sent away the multitudes, and entered into the boat, and came into the borders of Magadan.

MARK 8

to their home, they will faint in the way; and some of them are come from far.

D And his disciples answered him, Whence shall one be able to fill these men with bread here in a desert place? And he asked them, How many loaves have ye? And they said, Seven.

E And he commanded the multitude to sit down on the ground:

F and he took the seven loaves, and having given thanks, he brake, and gave to his disciples, to set before them; and they set them before the multitude.

G And they had a few small fishes: and having blessed them, he commanded to set these also before them.

H And they did eat, and were filled: and they took up, of broken pieces that remained over, seven baskets.

I And they were about four thousand:

J and he sent them away. And straightway he entered into the boat with his disciples, and came into the parts of Dalmanutha.

§ 68 PHARISEESE DEMAND SIGNS FROM JESUS

MATT 16:1-4

A And the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and tempting him asked him to shew them a sign from heaven.

B But he answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the heaven is red. And in the morning, It will be foul weather to-day: for the heaven is red and lowring. Ye know how to discern the face of the heaven; but ye cannot discern the signs of the times.

MARK 8:11-13

A And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

B And he said to the multitudes also, When ye see a cloud rising in the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it cometh to pass. And when ye see a south wind blowing, ye say, There will be a scorching heat; and it cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites, ye know how to interpret the face of the earth and the heaven; but

ERV margin: 1 Greek loaves 2 The following words, to the end of verse 3, are omitted by some of the most ancient and other important authorities 3 Or hot wind 4 Greek prose

A Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees answered him, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. (45 Q = Mt 12:38)

A And others, tempting him, sought of him a sign from heaven. (86 D = Lk 11:16)
MATTHEW 16

4 And adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of Jonah.

D And he left them, and departed.

MARK 8

C And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation.

D And he left them, and again entering into the boat departed to the other side.

LUKE

how is it that ye know not how to interpret this time? (96 66 A)

§ 69

THE LEAVEN OF THE PHARISEES

MATTHEW 16:5-12

A And the disciples came to the other side and forgot to take bread. And Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

B And they reasoned among themselves, saying, We took no bread. And Jesus perceiving it said, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have no bread?

C Do ye not yet perceive, neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up? How is it that ye do not perceive that I spake not to you concerning bread?

D But beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. Then understood they how that he bade them not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the teaching of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

MARK 8:14-21

A And they forgot to take bread; and they had not in the boat with them more than one loaf. And he charged them, saying, We have no bread. And Jesus perceiving it saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread?

B And they reasoned one with another, saying, We have no bread. And Jesus perceiving it saith unto them, Why reason ye, because ye have no bread?

C Do ye not yet perceive, neither understand? Have ye your heart hardened? Having eyes, see ye not? and having ears, hear ye not? and do ye not remember? When I brake the five loaves among the five thousand, how many baskets full of broken pieces took ye up? They say unto him, Twelve. And when the seven among the four thousand, how many baskets full of broken pieces took ye up? And they say unto him, Seven. And he said unto them, Do ye not yet understand?

D Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. (99 B)
THE BLIND MAN OF BETHSAIDA

Mark 8:22–26

A And they come unto Bethsaida. And they bring to him a blind man, and beseech him to touch him. And he took hold of the blind man by the hand, and brought him out of the village; and when he had spit on his eyes, and laid his hands upon him, he asked him, Seest thou aught? And he looked up, and said, I see men; for I behold them as trees, walking. Then again he laid his hands upon his eyes; and he looked stedfastly, and was restored, and saw all things clearly.

B And he sent him away to his home, saying, Do not even enter into the village.
CHAPTER XII
FORECASTS OF CONFLICT WITH THE JERUSALEM AUTHORITIES

§ 71 OPINION OF DISCIPLES ABOUT JESUS

A Compare §60 portion K  
B Now when Jesus came into5 the parts of Cæsarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Who do men say that the Son of man is?

C2 And they4 said, Some say John the Baptist; some, Elijah: and others, Jeremiah, or one of the prophets.

D He saith unto5 them, But who say ye that I am? And Simon Peter an-16 swered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

E And Jesus an-17 swered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-Jonah: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven. And I also say unto thee8 that thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it.

F I will give unto thee the19 keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

G Then charged he the20 disciples that they should tell no man that he was the Christ.

H And he charged them30 that they should tell no man of him.

J But21 he charged them, and commanded them to tell this to no man;

A Compare §60 portion K  
B And Jesus went forth, and17 his disciples, into the villages of Cæsarea Philippi: and in the way he asked his disciples, saying unto them, Who do men say that I am?

C2 And they4 told him, saying, John the Baptist: and others, Elijah; but others, One of the prophets.

D And he asked29 them, But who say ye that I am? Peter answered and saith unto him, Thou art the Christ.

C2 And they answering said,19 John the Baptist; but others say, Elijah; and others, that one of the old prophets is risen again.

D And he said unto20 them, But who say ye that I am? And Peter answering said, The Christ of God.

ERV margin: 1 Many ancient authorities read that I the Son of man am: see Mark 8:27 and Luke 9:18 2 Greek Petros 3 Greek petra

c For another record of these estimates of Jesus, compare §58 bc

f Verily I say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and what things soever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. (§78 18:16)
§ 72 JESUS FORETELLS EVENTS AT JERUSALEM

MATTHEW 16:21-23
A. From that time began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up.

B. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall never be unto thee. But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art a stumblingblock unto me: for thou mindest not the things of God, but the things of men.

MARK 8:31-33
A. And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected by the elders, and the chief priests, and the scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again.

B. And he spake the sayings openly.

LUKE 9:22
A. Saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and the third day be raised up.

§ 73 SOME COSTS OF DISCIPLESHIP

MATTHEW 16:24-28
A. Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

B. For whosoever would save his life shall lose it: and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake shall find it.

MARK 8:34-9:1
A. And he called unto him the multitude with his disciples, and said unto them, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

B. For whosoever would save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's shall save it.

MARK 8:34-9:1
A. And he called unto him the multitude with his disciples, and said unto them, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.

B. For whosoever would save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.

LUKE 9:23-27
A. And he said unto all, If any man would come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.

B. For whosoever would save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.

ERV margin: 1 Some ancient authorities read Jesus Christ 2 Or, God have mercy on thee 3 Or soul

OF references: Mt 16:27 = Psalm 62:12 and Proverbs 24:12

A. The Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men; and they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised up. ($\$ 6 \, = \, Mt 17:22-23$)

A. The Son of man is delivered up into the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and when he is killed, after three days he shall rise again. ($\$ 6 \, = \, Mk 10:33$)

A. But first must he suffer many things and be rejected of this generation. ($\$ 112 \, = \, Lk 17:25$)

A. Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify: and the third day he shall be raised up. ($\$ 119 \, = \, Mt 20:19-19$)

A. Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death, and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles: and they shall mock him, and shall spit upon him, and shall scourge him, and shall kill him; and after three days he shall rise again. ($\$ 119 \, = \, Mk 10:33-34$)

A. For other references to these events, compare $\$ 74 \, = \, and \, 102$

A. Let these words sink into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men. ($\$ 76 \, = \, Lk 9:44$)

A. Behold, we go up to Jerusalem, and all the things that are written by the prophets shall be accomplished unto the Son of man. For he shall be delivered up unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and shamefully treated, and spit upon: and they shall scourge and kill him: and the third day he shall arise again. ($\$ 119 \, = \, Lk 18:31-33$)

A. Whosoever doeth not bear his own cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple. ($\$ 104 \, = \, Lk 14:27$)

B. Whosoever shall seek to gain his life shall lose it: but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake shall preserve it. ($\$ 112 \, = \, Lk 17:33$)

C. But he that denieth me in the presence of men shall be denied in the presence of the angels of God. ($\$ 101 \, = \, Lk 12:9$)
**THE TRANSGRESSION OF JESUS**

**Matt 17:1-13**
A And after six days Jesus 

*take*th with him Peter, and 

James, and John his brother, 

and bringeth them up into a 

high mountain apart: 

B and he 

was transfigured before them: 

and his face did shine as the 

sun, and his garments became 

white as the light. 

C And be-

hold, there appeared unto 

them Moses and Elijah talk-

ing with him.

D And Peter 

answered, and said unto 

Jesus, Lord, it is good for us 
to be here: if thou wilt, I will 
makethere three *tabernacles;* 

one for thee, and one for 

Moses, and one for Elijah.

E* And while he was yet speaking, *behold, a bright cloud *over-

shadowed them: and behold, 
a voice out of the cloud, say-
ing, This is my beloved Son, 
in whom I am well pleased; 

hear ye him.

F And when the 6 

disciples heard it, they fell on 

their face, and were sore 

afraid. And Jesus came and 7

**Mark 9:2-13**
A And after six days Jesus 

*take*th with him Peter, and 

James, and John, and bring-

eth them up into a high moun-
tain apart by themselves: 

B and he was transfigured 

before them: and his gar-

ments became glistering, ex-
ceeding white; so as no fuller 
on earth can whiten them. 

C And there appeared unto 

them Elijah with Moses: and 

they were talking with Jesus.

D And Peter answereth and 5 saith to Jesus, Rabbi, it is 
good for us to be here: and let 
us makethree *tabernacles;* 

one for thee, and one for 

Moses, and one for Elijah. 

For he wist not what to 6 answer; for they became sore 

afraid. 

E* And there came a 7 cloud overshadowing them: 
and there came a voice out of 
the cloud, This is my beloved 
Son: hear ye him.

F And when the 6 

disciples heard it, they fell on 

their face, and were sore 

afraid. And Jesus came and 7

**Luke 9:28-36**
A And it came to pass about 8 
eight days after these sayings, 

he took with him Peter and 

John and James, and went up 

into the mountain to pray. 

B And as he was praying, the 9 fashion of his countenance was 
altered, and his raiment be-

came white and dazzling. 

C And behold, there talked 30 with him two men, which 

were Moses and Elijah; who 31 appeared in glory, and spake of 
his *decease* which he was 

about to accomplish at Jeru-

salem. Now Peter and they 32 that were with him were 

heavy with sleep: but when 

they were fully awake, they 
saw his glory, and the two 

men that stood with him. 

D And it came to pass, as 33 they were parting from him, 

Peter said unto Jesus, Master, 
it is good for us to be here: 

and let us make three *taber-
nacles;* one for thee, and one 

for Moses, and one for Elijah. 

For he wist not what to 6 answer; for they became sore 

afraid. 

E* And while he said these 34 things, there came a cloud, and 

overshadowed them: and 
they feared as they entered 
into the cloud. And a voice 35 came out of the cloud, saying, 

This is my Son, my chosen: 

hear ye him.
Matt 17
touched them and said, Arise, and be not afraid.

Mark 9
And lift-8

Luke 9
And when the6

Compare portion J below

1 And as they were coming 9
down from the mountain, Jesus commanded them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen from the dead.

J And they kept the9
saying, questioning among themselves what the rising again from the dead should mean.

Compare portion H above

K And his dis-10

K And they asked him,11
saying, "The scribes say that Elijah must first come. And12
he said unto them, Elijah indeed cometh, and restoreth all things:

LL and how
is it written of the Son of man, that he should suffer
many things and be set at

M’unto you, that Elijah is come already, and they knew him not, but did unto him what-
soever they listed.

M But I say unto you,15
that Elijah is come, and they have also done unto him whatsover they listed, even as it is written of him.

N Even so shall the Son of man also suffer of them.

O Then under-13
stood the disciples that he spake unto them of John the Baptist.

§ 75 THE YOUTH WITH THE DUMB SPIRIT

Matt 17:14-20
And when they were come14
to the multitude,

Mark 9:14-29
And when they came to14
the disciples, they saw a great multitude about them, and
scribes questioning with them.
And straightway all the mul-15
titude, when they saw him, were greatly amazed, and run-
ning to him saluted him.

A And it came to pass, on the37
next day, when they were come down from the moun-
tain, a great multitude met him.

ERV margin: 2 Or was past 3 Or, How is it that the scribes say . . . come?

OT references: Mt 17:12-13 and Mk 9:11-12 = Malachi 4:5-6 Mt 17:12 and Mk 9:13 = 1 Kings 19:12, 10

1-8 For accounts of the forecast of suffering and death, compare §72 A and attached references
L Compare §119 portion D
M For another record of the identification of John the Baptist with Elijah by Jesus, compare §41 O

90
And he asked them, what question ye with them? And one of the multitude answered him, Master, I brought unto thee my son, which hath a dumb spirit; and whatsoever it taketh him, it dasheth him down: and he foameth, and grindeth his teeth, and pineth away: and I spake to thy disciples that they should cast it out; and they were not able.

And he answered them, saying, Because of the generati of unbelief: for this generation is an unbelief generation. Then answered he them, when they brought him: And when he saw him, straightway he tare him grievously; and he fell on the ground, and foamed. And he asked his father, How long is it since this hath come unto him? And he said, From a child. And oftentimes it hath cast him both into the fire and into the waters, to destroy him: but if thou canst do anything, have compassion on us, and help us. And Jesus said unto him, If thou canst! All things are possible to him that believeth. Straightway the father of the child cried out, and said, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

And the disciples came to Jesus, and said, why could not our faith cast it out? And Jesus said unto them, because of your unbelief: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible to you. Howbeit he turned, and rebuked the unclean spirit, and it came out; and nothing was done any more in that place. And they were all astonishèd at it; for they marveled, saying, What manner of words are these? For he commandeth even the unclean spirit with words. And Jesus rebuked the multitudes, and suffered them not to put him forward in the doctrine. And he called the twelve together, and gave them power and authority over unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.
RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

§ 75

Matt 17

Could we not cast it out? And he saith unto them,20 Because of your little faith:

Mark 9

His disciples asked him privately, saying, We could not cast it out. And he said unto them, This kind can come out by nothing, save by prayer.1

Luke

And the Lord said, If ye had faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye would say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou rooted up, and be thou planted in the sea; and it would have obeyed you. (§109F)

§ 76 JESUS REPEATS HIS FORECAST OF EVENTS

Matt 17:22-23

A And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them,

b The Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men; and they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised up.

c And they were exceeding sorry.

Mark 9:30-32

A And they went forth from thence, and passed through Galilee; and he would not that any man should know it.

b The Son of man is delivered up unto the hands of men, and they shall kill him; and when he is killed, after three days he shall rise again.

c But they understood not this saying, and were afraid to ask him.

Luke 9:43-45

A But while all were amazed at all things which he did, he said unto his disciples,

b Let these words sink into your ears: for the Son of man shall be delivered up into the hands of men.

c But they understood not this saying, and it was concealed from them, that they should not perceive it: and they were afraid to ask him about this saying.

§ 77 THE PROBLEM OF TRIBUTE PAYMENT

Matt 17:24-27

A And when they were come to Capernaum, they that received the half-shekel came to Peter, and said, Doth not your master pay the half-shekel? He saith, Yea. And when he came into the house, Jesus spake first to him, saying, What thinkest thou, Simon? the kings of the earth, from whom do they receive toll or tribute? from their sons, or from strangers? And when he said, From strangers, Jesus said unto him, Therefore the sons are free.

b But, lest we cause them to stumble, go thou to the sea, and cast a hook, and take up the fish that

ERV margin: 1 Or, How is it that we could not cast it out? 2 Many ancient authorities add and fasting
3 Many authorities, some ancient, insert verse 21: But this kind goeth not out save by prayer and fasting: see Mark 9:29 4 Some ancient authorities read were gathering themselves together 5 Greek didrachma 6 Or teacher

OT references: Mt 17:24 = Exodus 30:11-15

n Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do what is done to the fig tree, but even if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou taken up and cast into the sea, it shall be done. (§127 C = Mt 21:21)

n Have faith in God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou taken up and cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that what he saith cometh to pass; he shall have it. (§127 C = Mk 11:22-23)

b For other records of these forecasts, compare §72 a and attached references

92
MATT 17
first cometh up; and when thou hast opened
his mouth, thou shalt find a 'shaked: that take,
and give unto them for me and thee.

§ 78 DISCOURSE ON STANDARDS OF GREATNESS

MATT 18:11-15
A In that hour came the dis-1
iples unto Jesus, saying,
Who then is greatest in the
kingdom of heaven?

B" Compare portion E below

C And he2 called to him a little child,
and set him in the midst of
them, and said,

D Verily I say unto you, Except ye turn,
and become as little children,
ye shall in no wise enter
into the kingdom of heaven.

E Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little
child, the same is the greatest
in the kingdom of heaven.

F And whoso shall receive one3
such little child in my name receiveth me:

G° He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth
me receiveth him that sent me. (§57 F)

H" Compare portion E above

MARK 9:33-50
A And they came to Caper-33
naum: and when he was in
the house he asked them,
What were ye reasoning in
the way? But they held their peace:
for they had disputed one
with another in the way,
who was the greatest.

B" And he sat down, and called the
twelve; and he saith unto them,
If any man would be first,
he shall be last of all,
and minister of all.

C And he6 took a little child, and set
him in the midst of them:
and taking him in his arms,
he said unto them,

D Verily I say unto you,10
Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child,
he shall in no wise enter therein.

E" Compare portion B above

LUKE 9:46-50
A And there arose a reason-
ning among them, which of
them should be greatest.

B" But when Jesus saw the rea-
soning of their heart, he took
a little child, and set him by his
side, and said unto them,48

C But when Jesus saw the rea-
sion of their heart, he took
a little child, and set him by his
side, and said unto them,48

D Verily I say unto you,18
Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child,
he shall in no wise enter therein.

E" Compare portion H below

F Whosoever shall receive this
little child in my name receiv-
eth me:

G° and whosoever receiveth
me receiveth him that sent me.

H" for he that is least
among you all, the same is
great.

I" And John answered and said,
Master, we saw one casting
out devils in thy name; and we
forbade him, because he fol-
lowed not us. But Jesus said,30

J Forbid him not: for there is no
man which shall do a mighty work in my
name, and be able quickly to speak

ERV margin: 1 Greek smaller 2 Greek greater 3 Greek lesser 4 Or Teacher 5 Greek demons 6 Greek power

p Not so shall it be among you: but whosoever would become great
among you shall be your minister;
and whosoever would be first among
you shall be your servant. (§120 j = Mt 20:26-27)

q But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. (§123 e = Mt 23:11)

r If he that heareth thee heareth me; and he that rejecteth thee rejecteth me; and he that rejecteth me rejecteth him that
sent me. (§82 o = Lk 10:16)

1 With the last verse of this portion, compare §§ N and §§ M

93
Matt 18

1. And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones a cup of cold water only, in the name of a disciple, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward. (§57 Q)

2. But whosoever shall cause one of these little ones which believe on me to stumble, it is profitable for him that a great millstone should be hanged about his neck, and that he should be sunk in the depth of the sea.

3. Woe unto the world because of occasions of stumbling! for it must needs be that the occasions come; but woe to that man through whom the occasion cometh!

4. And if thy hand or thy foot causeth thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into the eternal fire. And if thine eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is good for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into the fire of hell.

Mark 9

1. And whosoever shall give you a cup of water to drink, because ye are Christ's, verily I say unto you, he shall in no wise lose his reward.

2. And whosoever shall cause one of these little ones that believe on me to stumble, it were better for him if a great millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were cast into the sea.

Luke 17

1. It was well for him if a millstone were hanged about his neck, and he were thrown into the sea, rather than that he should cause one of these little ones to stumble. (§109 B)

2. It is impossible but that occasions of stumbling should come: but woe unto him, through whom they come! (§109 A)

3. And if thy hand cause thee to stumble, cut it off: it is good for thee to enter into life maimed, rather than having thy two hands to go into hell, into the unquenchable fire. And if thy foot cause thee to stumble, cut it off: it is good for thee to enter into life maimed, rather than having thy two feet to be cast into hell. And if thine eye cause thee to stumble, cast it out: it is good for thee to enter into the kingdom of God with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell; for every one shall be salted with fire.

4. Salt is good: but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? Have salt in yourselves, and be at peace one with another.

ERV margin: 1 Greek in name that ye are 2 Many ancient authorities omit on me 3 Greek a millstone turned by on ass 4 Greek Gehenna 5 Ver 44 and 46 (which are identical with verse 48) are omitted by the best ancient authorities 6 Greek Gehenna of fire 7 Many ancient authorities add and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt: see Leviticus 2:13 8 Many authorities, some ancient, insert verse 11: For the Son of man came to save that which was lost: see Luke 19:10

OT references: Mk 9:48 = Isaiah 66:24  Mk 9:49 = Leviticus 2:13

M And if thy right eye causeth thee to stumble, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body be cast into hell. And if thy right hand causeth thee to stumble, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not thy whole body go into hell. (§57 C = Mt 5:29-30)
MATT \textit{18}

Q How think ye? if\textsuperscript{2} any man have a hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety andnine, and go unto the mountains, and seek that which goeth astray? And if so be that he find it,\textsuperscript{3} verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth over it more than over the ninety andnine which have not gone astray. Even\textsuperscript{4} so it is not the will of ‘your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

And if thy brother sin\textsuperscript{5} against thee, go, shew him his fault between thee and him alone: if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother.

But\textsuperscript{6} if he hear thee not, take with thee one or two more, that at the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he refuse\textsuperscript{7} to hear them, tell it unto the church: and if he refuse to hear the church also, let him be unto thee as the Gentile and the publican.

Verily I\textsuperscript{8} say unto you, What things soever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and what things soever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Again I say unto\textsuperscript{9} you, that if two of you shall agree on earth as touching anything that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.

Then came Peter, and said\textsuperscript{10} to him, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? until seven times? Jesus saith unto him,\textsuperscript{11} I say not unto thee, Until seven times; but, Until seventy times seven.

Luke

Q What man of you, having a\textsuperscript{1} hundred sheep, and having lost one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and his neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto you, that even so there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety andnine righteous persons, which need no repentance. (\textit{105B})

Take heed to yourselves: if\textsuperscript{12} thy brother sin, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.

\textit{v And if he sin against thee} four seven times in the day, and seven times turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him. (\textit{109CD})

\textit{ERV margin: 1 Greek a thing willed before your Father 2 Some ancient authorities read my 3 Some ancient authorities omit against thee 4 Or congregation 5 Or seventy times and seven}

\textit{OT references: Mt 18:16 = Deuteronomy 10:15}

\textit{7 I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. (\textit{P} = Mt 16:19)}
Matt 18

.Fore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would make a reckoning with his 2servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not wherewith to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The 3servant therefore fell down and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And the lord of that 4servant, being moved with compassion, released him, and forgave him the debt. But that 5servant went out, and found one of his fellow-servants, which owed him a hundred pence: and he laid hold on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay what thou owest. So his fellow-servant fell down and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay that which was due. So when his fellow-servants saw what was done, they were exceeding sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. Then his lord called him unto him, and saith to him, Thou wicked 6servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou besoughtest me: shouldest not thou also have had mercy on thy fellow-servant, even as I had mercy on thee? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due. x So shall also my heavenly Father do unto you, if ye forgive not every one his brother from your hearts.

ERV margin: 1 Greek bondservant; 2 This talent was probably worth about £ 240 5 Greek bondservant
5 Greek bond
5 The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence halfpenny

x But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. (§37 x = Mt 6:15)
X And when all the people had prayed, forgiving, if ye have aught against any one; that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. (§127 X = Mk 11:25)
CHAPTER XIII
DEPARTURE FROM GALILEE FOR JERUSALEM

§ 79 GENERAL STATEMENT OF JOURNEY

MATTHEW 19:1-2
And it came to pass when Jesus had finished these words, he departed from Galilee, and came into the borders of Judea beyond Jordan; and great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.

MARK 10:1
And he arose from thence, and cometh into the borders of Judea and beyond Jordan: and multitudes come together unto him again; and, as he was wont, he taught them again.

LUKE 9:51
And it came to pass, when the days were well-nigh come that he should be received up, he steadfastly set his face to go to Jerusalem.

§ 80 ATTITUDE OF SAMARITANS TOWARD JESUS

LUKE 9:52-56
And he sent messengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans, to make ready for him. And they did not receive him, because his face was as though he were going to Jerusalem. And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we bid fire to come down from heaven, and consume them? But he turned, and rebuked them. And they went to another village.

§ 81 SOME TESTS OF DISCIPLESHIP

MATTHEW 8:19-22
A And there came a scribe, and said unto him, Master, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the heaven have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

B And another of the disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. But Jesus saith unto him, Follow me; and leave the dead to bury their own dead. (§50 B)

LUKE 9:57-62
A And as they went in the way, a certain man said unto him, I will follow thee whithersoever thou goest. And Jesus said unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the heaven have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head.

B And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. But he said unto him, Leave the dead to bury their own dead; but go thou and publish abroad the kingdom of God.

C And another also said, I will follow thee, Lord; but first suffer me to bid farewell to them that are at my house. But Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God.

ERV margin: 1 Greek were being fulfilled 2 Many ancient authorities add even as Elijah did 3 Some ancient authorities add and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of: some, but fewer, add also For the Son of man came not to destroy men's lives, but to save them 4 Greek one scribe 5 Or Teacher 6 Greek lodging-places

OT references: Lk 9:54 = 2 Kings 1:10-12

97
§ 82 THE MISSION OF THE DISCIPLES

Matthew

A Compare §56 portion C

B Then saith he unto his disciples, The harvest is truly plenteous, but the labourers are few. Pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest. (§56B)

C And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, cast out devils: freely ye received, freely give.

D Compare portion M below

E Get you no gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses; no wallet for your journey, neither two coats, nor shoes, nor staff; for the labourer is worthy of his food. And into whatsoever city or village ye shall enter, search out who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go forth.

F And as ye enter into the house, salute it. And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you.

G Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs in the midst of wolves.

H Compare portion F above

I Compare portion C above

J And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, as ye go forth out of that house or that city, shake off the dust of your feet.

K Compare portion C above

L Verily I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the day of judgement, than for that city.

Compare portion P below

Luke 10:1–24

A Now after these things the Lord appointed seventy others, and sent them two and two before his face into every city and place, whither he himself was about to come.

B And he said unto them, The harvest is plenteous, but the labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the harvest, that he send forth labourers into his harvest.

C Compare portion I below

D Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs in the midst of wolves.

E Carry no purse, no wallet, no shoes: and salute no man on the way.

F Compare portion H below

G And into whatsoever house ye shall enter, first say, Peace be to this house. And if a son of peace be there, your peace shall rest upon him: but if not, it shall turn to you again.

H And in that same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the labourer is worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house.

I But into whatsoever city ye shall enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you:

J And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The kingdom of God is come nigh unto you. But into whatsoever city ye shall enter, and they receive you not, go out into the streets thereof and say, Even the dust from your city, that cleaveth to our feet, we do wipe off against you:

K howbeit know this, that the kingdom of God is come nigh.

L I say unto you, It shall be more tolerable in that day for Sodom, than for that city.

ERV margin: 1 Many ancient authorities add and so in verse 17 2 Greek demons 3 Greek girdles

4 Or enter first, say 5 Or it

C And he sent them forth to preach the kingdom of God, and to heal the sick.

E And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staff, nor wallet, nor bread, nor money; neither have two coats.

F And into whatsoever house ye enter, there abide, and thence depart.

J And as many as receive you, not, when ye depart from that city, shake off the dust from your feet for a testimony against them. (§56 F, K = Mk 6:8–11)
MATTHEW

Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. (15:10)

Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which were done in you, they would have repented long ago in sackcloth and ashes. Howbeit I say unto you, it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the day of judgment, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, shall thou be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt go down unto Hades:

Q For if the mighty works had been done in Sodom which were done in thee, it would have remained until this day. (15:11–14)

I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable for the land of Sodom in the day of judgment, than for thee. (15:15–16)

He that receiveth you receiveth me, and he that receiveth me receiveth him that sent me. (15:15–16)

Luke 10

Compare portion D above

Woe unto thee, Chorazin! woe unto thee, Bethsaida! for if the mighty works had been done in Tyre and Sidon, which were done in you, they would have repented long ago, sitting in sackcloth and ashes. Howbeit it shall be more tolerable for Tyre and Sidon in the judgement, than for you. And thou, Capernaum, shalt thou be exalted unto heaven? thou shalt be brought down unto Hades.

Compare portion L above

He that heareth you heareth me; and he that rejecteth you rejecteth me; and he that rejecteth me rejecteth him that sent me. (10:16–17)

And the seventy returned with joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us in thy name. And he said unto them, I beheld Satan fallen as lightning from heaven. Behold, I have given you authority to tread upon serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall in any wise hurt you. Howbeit in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rejoice that your names are written in heaven.

In that same hour he rejoiced in the Holy Spirit, and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, that thou didst hide these things from the wise and understanding, and didst reveal them unto babes: yea, Father; for so it was well-pleasing in thy sight.

All things have been delivered unto me of my Father: and no one knoweth the Son, save the Father; neither doth any know the Father, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him. (10:20–24)

All things have been delivered unto me of my Father: and no one knoweth who the Son is, save the Father; and who the Father is, save the Son, and he to whomsoever the Son willeth to reveal him.

And turning to the disciples, he said privately, Blessed are the eyes which see the things that ye see: for I say unto you, that many prophets and kings desired to see the things which ye see, and saw them not; and to hear the things which ye hear, and heard them not.

ERV margin: 1 Or simple 2 Greek powers 3 Many ancient authorities read be brought down 4 Greek demons 5 Or by 6 Or praise 7 Or that


Compare portion L above

Q And whom shall I receive one such little child in my name receiveth me. (15:16–17)

Q Whosoever shall receive one of such little children in my name, receiveth me: and whosoever receiveth me, receiveth not me, but him that sent me. (15:16–17)

Q Whosoever shall receive this little child in my name receiveth me: and whosoever shall receive me receiveth him that sent me. (15:16–17)

Q Q Q

For another record of a report on a Tour, compare §59

And these signs shall follow them that believe: in my name shall they cast out devils: they shall speak with new tongues; they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall in no wise hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. (15:17–19)

All authority hath been given unto me in heaven and on earth. (15:19–20)

99
\section*{§ 83 THE WAY OF ETERNAL LIFE}

\textbf{Luke 10:25-37}

A And behold, a certain lawyer stood up and tempted him, saying, \textquoteleft Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? \textquoteleft And he said unto him, \textquoteleft What is written in the law? how readest thou? \textquoteleft And he answering said, \textquoteleft Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, \textquoteleft Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live.

B But he, desiring to justify himself, said unto him, \textquoteleft Master, who is my neighbour? \textquoteleft And Jesus answered, saying, A certain man was going down from Jerusalem to Jericho; and there fell unto him a certain robber. And he stripped him of his clothing, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead. And by chance there came down a certain priest that day: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise a Levite also, when he came to the place, and saw him, passed by on the other side. But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, when he saw him, he was moved with compassion, and went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring on oil and wine; and he set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow he took out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said, \textquoteleft Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, I, when I come back again, will repay thee.

\textbf{C} Which of these three, thinkest thou, proved neighbour unto him that fell among the robbers? And he said, \textquoteleft He that shewed mercy.\textquoteleft And Jesus said, \textquoteleft Verily I say unto you, \textquoteleft He which spared his own soul shall not save it; but he shall lose it: but he which spared not his own soul shall save it.\textquoteleft

\section*{§ 84 MANY THINGS VS ONE THING}

\textbf{Luke 10:38-42}

Now as they went on their way, he entered into a certain village: and a certain woman named Martha received him into her house. And she had a sister called Mary, which also sat at the Lord's feet, and heard his word. But Martha was troubled for much Serving; and she came up to him, and said, \textquoteleft Lord, dost thou not care that my sister did leave me to serve alone? \textquoteleft Said her therefore that she helped me. But the Lord answered and said unto her, \textquoteleft Mar tha, Martha, thou art troubled and heavy-laden concerning many things: but one thing is needful: and Mary hath chosen that good part, which shall not be taken away from her.
§ 85 ELEMENTS OF PREVAILING PRAYER

MATTHEW

B After this manner therefore pray ye: Our 6 Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy 9 name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we also have forgiven our debtors. And 3 bring us not into temptation, but deliver us from the evil one. 5 (§ 7 W)

D Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: for every one that asketh receiveth; and he 8 that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, who, if his son shall ask him for a loaf, will give him a stone; or if he shall ask for a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him? (§ 8 K)

LUKE 11:1-13

A And it came to pass, as he was praying in a certain place, that when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, even as John also taught his disciples.
B And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Father, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Give us day by day our daily bread. And forgive us our sins; for we ourselves also for give every one that is indebted to us. And bring us not into temptation. 4

C And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say to him, Friend, lend me three loaves; for a friend of mine is come to me from a journey, and I have nothing to set before him; and he from within shall answer and say, 7 Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee? I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will arise and give him 6 as many as he needeth.

D And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. And 11 of which you is a father shall ask his son ask for a loaf, and he give him a stone? or a fish, and he for a fish give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

§ 86 A CHARGE OF ALLIANCE WITH SATAN

MATTHEW 12

A Then was brought unto him 22 one possessed with a devil, blind and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the dumb man spake and saw.
B And all the multitude were amazed, and 23 said, Is this the son of David?
C But when the 24 Pharisees heard it, they said, This man doth not cast out devils, but 25 by Beelzebub the prince of the devils.
D Compare §§142 and attached references

LUKE 11:14-26

A And he was casting out a 21 devil which was dumb. And it came to pass, when the 21 devil was gone out, the dumb man spake; and 22 the multitudes marvelled.
B But some of them 23 said, 24 By Beelzebub the prince of the devils casteth he out devils.
D And others, tempting 26 him, sought of him a sign from heaven.

ERV margin: 1 Many ancient authorities read Our Father, which art in heaven; see Matt 6:9. 2 Many ancient authorities add Thy will be done, as in heaven, so on earth; see Matt 6:10. 3 Greek our bread for the coming day. 4 Many ancient authorities add but deliver us from the evil one (or from evil); see Matt 6:13. 5 Or evil. 6 Many authorities, some ancient, but with variations, add For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. 7 Or whatsoever things. 8 Some ancient authorities omit a loaf, and he give him a stone? or 9 Or a demoniac. 10 Greek demon. 11 Greek demons. 12 Or in. 13 Or in.

ABC For another Matthew account covering portions ABC, compare §§5 B
C Matt parallel shown above under C
C And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem said, He hath Beelzebub, and, By the prince of the devil's casteth he out the devils. (§ 152 = Mk 3:22)
\[ \text{Matt 12} \]

And knowing their thoughts he said\(^2\) unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: and if\(^6\) Satan casteth out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?

\(v\) And if I \(^{1b}\) by Beelzebub cast out \(^{2\text{b}}\) devils, \(^{1\text{b}7}\) whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges. But if I \(^{1\text{b}}\) by the Spirit of\(^8\) God cast out \(^{2\text{b}}\) devils, then is the kingdom of God come upon you.

\(c\) Or how can one enter into the\(^9\) house of the strong man, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house.

\(h^\text{He}\) He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth. (\(\text{Mt} 12:30\))

\(x\) But the unclean spirit, when he is gone out of\(^{43}\) of the man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest, and findeth it not. Then \(^{44}\) he saith, \(^{44}\) I will return into my house whence I came out; and when \(^{45}\) he is come, \(^{45}\) he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished. Then \(^{45}\) goeth \(^{45}\) he, and taketh with\(^{45}\) himself seven other spirits more evil than he himself; and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man becometh worse than the first. (\(\text{Mt} 12:43\))

\(\text{Luke 11}\)

But\(^{27}\) he, knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; \(^{28}\) and a house divided against a house falleth. And if Satan also is divided\(^{18}\) against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say that I cast out \(^{19}\) devils \(^{b}\) by .

\(v\) And if I \(^{b}\) by Beelzebub cast out \(^{19}\) devils, by whom do your sons cast them out? therefore shall they be your judges. But if I\(^{20}\) by the finger of God cast out \(^{21}\) devils, then is the kingdom of God come upon you.

\(c\) When\(^{21}\) the strong man fully armed guardeth his own court, his goods are in peace: but when\(^{22}\) stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him his whole armour wherein he trusted, and divideth his spoils.

\(h^\text{He}\) He that is not with me is against me;\(^{23}\) and he that gathereth not with me scattereth.

\(1\) The unclean spirit when \(^{24}\) he is gone out of the\(^{25}\) man, passeth through waterless places, seeking rest; and finding none, \(^{26}\) he saith, I will turn back unto my house whence I came out. And\(^{27}\) when \(^{28}\) he is come, \(^{28}\) he findeth it swept and garnished. Then \(^{28}\) goeth \(^{28}\) he, and taketh to\(^{28}\) him\(^{16}\) seven other spirits more evil than he himself; and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man becometh worse than the first.

\(\text{§ 87 BASIS OF REAL RELATIONSHIP TO JESUS}\)

For an account in \text{Matt-Mark-Luke} of similar general content, compare \(\text{§ 46}\)

\(\text{Luke 11:27-28}\)

And it came to pass, as he said these things,\(^{27}\) a certain woman out of the multitude lifted up her voice, and said unto him, Blessed is the womb that bare thee, and the breasts which thou didst suck. But he said, Yea rather,\(^{48}\) blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.

---

ERV margin: 1 Or and house falleth upon house 2 Greek demons 3 Or in 4 Or it 5 Or itself

\(x\) Matt parallel shown above under B

\(x\) And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, How can Satan cast out Satan? And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that house will not be able to stand.

\(x\) And if Satan hath risen up against himself, and is divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

\(o\) Matt parallel shown above under G

\(o\) But no one can enter into the house of the strong man, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man; and then he will spoil his house. (\(\text{Mt} 27:32-37\))

\(x\) With the first half of this saying, compare the last verse of \(\text{§ 88 portion 1}\)
CHAPTER XIV

CONDEMNATION FOR OPPONENTS AND CONCERN FOR DISCIPLES

§ 88 PHARISEES DEMAND SIGNS FROM JESUS

Matt 12:38-42

A* Then certain of the scribes and Pharisees answered him, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee.

B* But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet:

C* for as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the whale; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

D* Compare portion F below

Luke 11:29-32

A** Compare §86 portion D

B** And when the multitudes were gathering together unto him, he began to say, This generation is an evil generation: it seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it but the sign of Jonah.

C** For even as Jonah became a sign unto the Ninevites, so shall also the Son of man be to this generation.

D** The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgement with the men of this generation, and shall condemn them: for she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, she greater than Solomon is here.

E** The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the judgement with this generation, and shall condemn it: for they repented at the preaching of Jonah; and behold, she greater than Solomon is here.

F** Compare portion D above

§ 89 THE USE AND TEST OF TRUTH

Matthew

A* Neither do men light a lamp, and put it under the bushel, but on the stand; and it shineth unto all that are in the house. (§38N)


A** No man, when he hath lighted a lamp, putteth it in a cellar, neither under the bushel, but on the stand, that they which enter in may see the light.

ERV margin:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>1 Or Teacher</th>
<th>2 Greek sea-monster</th>
<th>3 Greek more than</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>OT references:</td>
<td>Mt 12:30 and Lk 11:29 = Jonah 3:1-4</td>
<td>Mt 12:40 = Jonah 1:27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mt 12:42 and Lk 11:32 = Jonah 3:5-10</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

A And the Pharisees and Sadducees came, and tempting him asked him to shew them a sign from heaven.

B But he answered and said unto them, . . . An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of Jonah. And he left them, and departed. (§68 A-D = Mt 16:1-4)

A And the Pharisees came forth, and began to question with him, seeking of him a sign from heaven, tempting him.

B And he sighed deeply in his spirit, and saith, Why doth this generation seek a sign? verily I say unto you, There shall no sign be given unto this generation. And he left them, and again entering into the boat departed to the other side. (§68 A-D = Mk 8:11-13)

A Is the lamp brought to be put under the bushel, or under the bed, and not to be put on the stand? (§47 Q = Mk 4:21)

A And no man, when he hath lighted a lamp, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but putteth it on a stand, that they which enter in may see the light. (§47 Q = Lk 8:16)

103
**Matthew**

b. The lamp of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness.

c. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is the darkness! (§38 B)

**Luke 11**

b. The lamp of thy body is thine eye: when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of light; but when it is evil, thy body also is full of darkness.

c. Look therefore whether the light that is in thee be not darkness.

d. Therefore thy whole body be full of light, having no part dark, it shall be wholly full of light, as when the lamp with its bright shining doth give thee light.

**§ 90 DISCOURSE ON THE Scribes AND PHARISEES**

**Matthew 23**

A. Compare §63 portions ABC

b. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and excess. Thou blind Pharisee, cleanse first the inside of the cup and of the platter, that the outside thereof may become clean also. (§132 M)

c. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, and love the chief place at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, and the salutations in the market-places, and to be called of men, Rabbi. (§132 D)

d. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto white sepulchres, which outwardly appear beautiful, but inwardly are full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous, but inwardly ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. (§132 N)

g. Yea, they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with their finger. (§132 C)

**Luke 11:**

1: Now as he spake, a Pharisee asked him to dine with him; and he went in, and sat down to meat. And when the Pharisee saw it, he marvelled that he had not first washed before dinner. And the Lord said unto him,

2: Now do ye Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter; but your inward part is full of extortion and wickedness. Ye foolish ones, did not he that made the outside make the inside also? Howbeit give for alms those things which are within; and behold, all things are clean unto you.

b. But woe unto you Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and rue and every herb, and pass over judgement and the love of God: but these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

d. Woe unto you Pharisees! for ye love the chief seats in the synagogues, and the salutations in the marketplaces.

e. Woe unto you! for ye are as the tombs which appear not, and the men that walk over them know it not.

f. And one of the lawyers answering saith unto him, Master, in saying this thou reproachest us also. And he said,

g. Woe unto you lawyers also! for ye have lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.

**ERV margin:** 1 Greek breakfast 2 Or ye can 3 Or dill 4 Or Teacher 5 Many ancient authorities omit and grievous to be borne

**OT references:** Mt 23:5 = Exodus 13:9 and Numbers 15:38-39 and Deuteronomy 6:8 and 11:18 Mt 23:23 and Mk 11:42 = Leviticus 27:30 and Micah 6:8

**D** Matt parallel shown above under D

**D** Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and to have salutations in the marketplaces, and chief seats in the synagogues, and chief places at feasts. (§132 D = Mt 11:30-39)

**D** Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and have salutations in the marketplaces, and chief seats in the synagogues, and chief places at feasts. (§132 D = Lk 20:46)


**Matt 23**

H. Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, 

criers for ye build the sepulchres of the prophets, 

garnish the tombs of the righteous, and say, If 

If we had been in the days of our fathers, we 

should not have been partakers with them in the 

blood of the prophets. Wherefore ye witness 
yourselves, that ye are sons of them that slew 

the prophets. 

(§ 132 Q)

II Therefore, behold, I send unto you prophets, 

and wise men, and scribes: some of them shall ye 

kill and crucify; and some of them shall ye 

scourge in your synagogues, and persecute from 

city to city: that upon you may come all these 

righteous blood shed on the earth, from the blood of 

Abel the righteous unto the blood of Zachariah 

son of Barachiah, whom ye slew between the sanctuary 

and the altar. Verily I say unto you, All these 

things shall come upon this generation. 

(§ 132 Q)

I But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, 
hypocrites! because ye shut the kingdom of heaven 
against men: for ye enter not in yourselves, 
neither suffer ye them that are entering in to 
enter. 

(§ 132 I)

**Luke 11**

H. Woe unto you! for ye build the tombs of the prophets, 
your fathers killed them. So ye are witnesses and 

consent unto the works of your fathers: for they killed them, and ye build their tombs.

I Therefore also said the wisdom of God, I will send unto them prophets and apostles; and some of them shall kill and persecute; that 

the blood of all the prophets, which was shed 

from the foundation of the world, may be requir 

ed of this generation; from the blood of 

Abel 

unto the blood of Zachariah, who perished 

between the altar and the sanctuary: yea, I 

say unto you, it shall be required of this gener 

ation.

J Woe unto you lawyers! for ye took away 
The key of knowledge: ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered.

K And when he was come out from thence, 
the scribes and the Pharisees began to press 
unto him vehemently, and to provoke him to 
speak of 

many things; laying wait for him, to 
catch something out of his mouth.

§ 91 INJUNCTIONS FOR THE FUTURE OF THE DISCIPLES

**Matthew**

**Luke 12:1-12**

A In the mean time, when the many thousands of the multitude were gathered together, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, 

B Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, 
which is hypocrisy.

C But there is nothing covered up, that shall not be revealed: and hid, that shall not be known.

D Wherefore whatsoever ye have said in the darkness shall be heard in the light; and what ye have spoken in the ear in the inner chambers shall be proclaimed upon the housetops.

E And I say unto you, Be not afraid of them which 

kill the body, but are not able to destroy both soul and body in hell.

ERV margin: 

1 Greek house 

2 Greek before 

3 Some authorities insert here, or after verse 12, verse 14: Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widows’ houses, even while for a pretence ye make long prayers: therefore ye shall receive greater condemnation; see Mark 12:40 and Luke 20:47 

4 Or set themselves vehemently against him 

5 Or more 

6 Greek the myriads of 

7 Or say unto his disciples, First of all beware ye 

8 Or authority 

9 Greek Gehenna

OT references: 

Mt 23:35 and Lk 11:50-51 = Genesis 4:8 and 2 Chronicles 24:20-22

b Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees. (§ 104 A = Mt 16:6)

b Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod. (§ 104 A = Mk 8:15)

C For there is nothing hid, save that it should be manifested; neither was anything made secret, but that it should come to light. (§ 147 A = Mk 4:22)

c For nothing is hid, that shall not be made manifest; nor anything secret, that shall not be known and come to light. (§ 147 A = Lk 8:17)

105
Matthew

Are not two sparrows sold for a farthing? and not one of them shall fall on the ground without your Father: but the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not: for ye are of more value than many sparrows.

Every one therefore who shall confess me before men, him will I also confess before my Father which is in heaven. But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven. (157 B-C)

And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever shall speak against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him. (453 B)

B But when they deliver you up, be not anxious: how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. (57 C)

Luke 12

Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings? and not one of them is forgotten in the sight of God. But the very hairs of your head are all numbered. Fear not: ye are of more value than many sparrows.

And I say unto you, Every one who shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God: but he that denieth me in the presence of men shall be denied in the presence of the angels of God.

And every one who shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Spirit it shall not be forgiven.

And when they bring you before the synagogues, and the rulers, and the authorities, be not anxious how or what ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: for the Holy Spirit shall teach you in that very hour what ye ought to say.

TEACHINGS AGAINST CONCERN ABOUT WEALTH

Luke 12:13-21

And one out of the multitude said unto him, Master, bid my brother divide the inheritance with me. But he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge or a divider over you? And he said unto them, Take heed, and keep yourselves from all covetousness: for a man’s life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: and he reasoned within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have not where to bestow my fruits? And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there I will bestow all my corn and my goods. And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, be merry. But God saith unto him, O for whoseover shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he cometh in his own glory, and of the glory of the Father, and of the holy angels. (53 C-Lk 9:26)

ERV margin: 1 Greek in me 2 Greek in him 3 Or Teacher 4 Greek for not in a man’s abundance consists in his life, from the things which he possesseth

And not a hair of your head shall perish. (134 M=Lk 21:18)

For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then shall he render unto every man according to his deeds. (173 C=Mt 10:27)

Therefore I say unto you, Every sin and blasphemy against the Spirit shall not be forgiven unto men; but the blasphemy against the Holy Spirit shall not be forgiven unto men. . . . . . neither in this world, nor in that which is to come. (453 B-Mt 12:31-32)

Verily I say unto you, All their sins shall be forgiven unto them: but whosoever shall blaspheme against the Holy Spirit hath never forgiveness, but is guilty of an eternal sin. (453 B-Mk 3:28-30)

And when they lead you to judgment, and deliver you up, be not anxious beforehand what ye shall speak: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost. (734 T=Mk 13:11)

Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate beforehand how to answer; for I will give you a mouth and wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to withstand or to gainsay. (734 T=Lk 21:14-15)
CONDEMNATION FOR OPPONENTS AND CONCERN FOR DISCIPLES § 94

LUKE 12
Thou fool! I say unto thee, Be not afraid of those who kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear Him who is able to destroy both soul and body in Hades.

A. Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious about food and drink; nor yet about clothes: for the life of the body is more than food, and the body than clothes.
B. Behold the birds of the heaven: for they neither sow nor reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye of much more value than they?
C. And which of you by being anxious can add anything to his stature? And why are ye anxious concerning raiment?
D. Consider the lilies, how they grow: they toil not, neither spin: yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field, which today is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?
E. Be not therefore anxious, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherein shall we be clothed? For after all these things do the Gentiles seek: for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.
F. But seek ye first his kingdom, and his righteousness: and all these things shall be added unto you.
G. Howbeit seek ye first this kingdom, and these things shall be added unto you.
H. Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father’s good pleasure to give you the kingdom.
I. Sell that ye have, and give alms:
J. J make for yourselves purses which wax not old, a treasure in the heavens that faileth not, where no thief draweth near, neither moth destroys.
K. For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

§ 93 TEACHINGS AGAINST ANXIETY ABOUT FOOD AND CLOTHING

MATTHEW 6

b Therefore I say unto you, Be not anxious for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the life more than the food, and the body than the raiment?
c Behold the birds of the heaven: for they neither sow nor reap, nor gather into barns; and your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye of much more value than they?
d And which of you by being anxious can add anything to his stature? And why are ye anxious concerning raiment?
e Consider the lilies, how they grow: they toil not, neither spin: yet I say unto you, that even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. But if God doth so clothe the grass of the field, which today is, and to-morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?
f Be not therefore anxious, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink? or, Wherein shall we be clothed? For after all these things do the Gentiles seek: for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.
g But seek ye first his kingdom, and his righteousness: and all these things shall be added unto you.
h Be not therefore anxious for the morrow: for the morrow will be anxious for itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.

§ 94 TEACHINGS ABOUT THE FUTURE

MATTHEW 24:43-51
A Compare the parable recorded in §26 portion
E Matt 25:1-10

ERV margin: 1 Greek they require thy soul 2 Or life 3 Or soul 4 Or age 5 Many ancient authorities read the kingdom of God 6 Greek dig through

f Be not therefore like unto them. for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. (§37 v Mt 6:8)

107
Matt 24

B "But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what watch the thief was coming, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken through.

C 
fore be ye also ready: for in an hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh.

E Who then is the faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath set over his household, to give them their food in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath. But if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord tarryeth; and shall begin to beat his fellow-servants, and shall eat and drink with the drunken; the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he expecteth not, and in an hour when he knoweth not, and shall cut him asunder; and appoint his portion with the hypocrites:

F "there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§ 39 A-D)

Luke 12

men looking for their lord, when he shall return from the marriage feast; that, when he cometh and knocketh, they may straightway open unto him. Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them sit down to meat, and shall come and serve them. And if he shall come in the second watch, and if in the third, and find them so, blessed are those servants.

B "But know this, that if the master of the house had known in what hour the thief was coming, he would have watched, and not have left his house to be broken through.

C Be ye also ready: for in an hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh.

D And Peter said, Lord, speakest thou this parable unto us, or even unto all? And the Lord said,

E Who then is the faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall set over his household, to give them their portion of food in due season? Blessed is that steward, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath. But if that steward shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat his fellow-servants, and shall eat and drink with the drunken; the lord of that steward shall come in a day when he expecteth not, and in an hour when he knoweth not, and shall cut him to pieces, and appoint his portion with the unfaithful.

G And that servant, which knew his lord's will, and made not ready, nor did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes; but he that knew not, and did things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes.

H And to whomsoever much is given, of him shall much be required: and to whom they commit much, of him will they ask the more.

ERV margin: 1 Greek bondservant 2 Or But this ye know 3 Greek digested through 4 Or the faithful steward, the wise man whom etc. 5 Greek bondservant 6 Or severely scourge him

C Compare § 36 b and attached references

D Compare § 36 b and attached references

108
CHAPTER XV

DEEP FEELING AND DIRECT TEACHING

§ 95 PHASES OF THE MISSION OF JESUS

MATTHEW 10:34-36

B Think not that I came to 1send peace on the earth: I came not to 2send peace, but a sword. For I came to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law: and a man's foes shall be they of his own house. 36

(§57 L)

LUKE 12:49-53

A And I came to cast fire upon the earth; and 49 what will I, if it is already kindled? But I 50 have a baptism to be baptized with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished!

B Think ye that I am come to give peace in the earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: for there shall be from henceforth five in one house divided, three against two, and two against three. They shall be divided, father against 55 son, and son against father; mother against daughter, and daughter against her mother; mother in law against her daughter in law, and daughter in law against her mother in law.

§ 96 THE SIGNS OF THE TIMES

MATTHEW

A But he answered and said unto them, 16: When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: 2 for the heaven is red. And in the morning, 3 will be foul weather to-day: for the heaven is red and lowering. Ye know how to discern the face of the heaven; but ye cannot discern the signs of the times. 468 B

(§57)

LUKE 12:54-59

A And he said to the multitudes also, When ye see a cloud rising in the west, straightway ye say, There cometh a shower; and so it cometh to pass. And when ye see a south wind blow ing, ye say, There will be a 5 scorching heat; and it cometh to pass. Ye hypocrites, ye know how to 4 interpret the face of the earth and the heaven; but how is it that ye know not how to 4 interpret this time?

B And why even of your 57 selves judge ye not what is right?

C For as thou 4 art going with thine adversary before the magistrate, on the way give diligence to be quit of him; lest haply he hale thee unto the judge, and the judge shall deliver thee to the officer, and the 6 officer shall cast thee into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou have paid the last farthing.

§ 97 WARNINGS OF IMPENDING FATE

LUKE 13:1-9

A Now there were some present at that very 1 season which told him of the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices.

ERV margin: 1 Greek cast 2 The following words, to the end of verse 3, are omitted by some of the most ancient and other important authorities 3 Or hot wind 4 Greek prove 5 Some ancient authorities omit deliver

OT references: Mt 10:33-36 and Lk 12:52-53 = Micah 7:6

A Or to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with? (§120 D = Mk 10:38)

A And with the baptism that I am baptized withal shall ye be baptized. (§120 F = Mk 10:50)
LUKE 13
And he answered and said unto them, Think ye that these Galileans were sinners above all the Galileans, because they have suffered these things? I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all in like manner perish.

Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them, think ye that they were offenders above all the men that dwell in Jerusalem? I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish.

And he spake this parable; A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came seeking fruit thereon, and found none. And he said unto the vinedresser, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why doth it also cumber the ground? And he answering said, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: and if it bear fruit thenceforth, well; but if not, thou shalt cut it down.

JESUS CENSURED FOR SABBATH HEALING

LUKE 13:10-17
And he was teaching in one of the synagogues on the sabbath day. And behold, a woman which had a spirit of infirmity eighteen years; and she was bowed together, and could in no wise lift herself up. And when Jesus saw her, he called her, and said to her, Woman, thou art loosed from thine infirmity. And he laid his hands upon her: and immediately she was made straight, and glorified God.

Ruler of the synagogue, being moved with indignation because Jesus had healed on the sabbath, answered and said to the multitude, There are six days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the day of the sabbath.

But the Lord answered him, and said, Ye hypocrites, doth not each one of you on the sabbath loose his ox or his ass from the stall, and lead him away to watering? And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan had bound, lo, these eighteen years, to have been loosed from this bond on the day of the sabbath?

And as he said these things, all his adversaries were put to shame: and all the multitude rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.
§ 99 PARABLES OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD

Matthew 13:31–33

A Another parable set he before them, saying, 

The kingdom of heaven is like unto a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and sowed it in his field: which indeed is less than all seeds; but when it is grown, it is greater than the herbs, and becometh a tree, so that the birds of the heaven come and lodge in the branches thereof.

Luke 13:18–21

A He said therefore, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto shall I liken it? It is like unto a grain of mustard seed, which a man took, and cast into his own garden; and it grew, and became a tree; and the birds of the heaven lodged in the branches thereof.

B And again he said, Whereunto shall I liken the kingdom of God? It is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till it was all leavened.

§ 100 LIMITS OF THE KINGDOM OF GOD

Matthew


A And he went on his way through cities and villages, teaching, and journeying on unto Jerusalem.

B And one said unto him, Lord, are they few that be saved? And he said unto them,

C Strive to enter in by the narrow door: for many, I say unto you, shall seek to enter in, and shall not be able.

D When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, open to us: and he shall answer and say to you, I know you not whence ye are;

E then shall ye begin to say, 

We did eat and drink in thy presence, and thou didst teach in our streets;

F and he shall say, I tell you, I know not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity.

G shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth,

ERV margin: 1 The word in the Greek denotes the Hebrew seah, a measure containing nearly a peck and a half. 2 Some ancient authorities omit the gate. 3 Many ancient authorities read How narrow is the gate, etc.

A Matt parallel shown above under A

A And he said, How shall we liken the kingdom of God? or in what parable shall we set it forth? It is like a grain of mustard seed, which, when it is sown upon the earth, though it be less than all the seeds that are upon the earth, yet when it is sown, growth up, and becometh greater than all the herbs, and putteth out great branches; so that the birds of the heaven can lodge under the shadow thereof. 

A And he said, And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.
Matthew

with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

(§39 D)

Luke 13

when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth without. And they shall come from the east and west, and from the north and south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God.

And behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.

§ 101 FORECAST OF HIS DEATH BY JESUS

Matt 23:37-39

A For other forecasts of forthcoming events at Jerusalem, compare §72 A and attached references

b O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto her! how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. (§132 R)


A In that very hour there came certain Pharisees, saying to him, Get thee out, and go hence: for Herod would fain kill thee. And he said unto them, Go and say to that fox, Behold, I cast out devils and perform cures to-day and to-morrow, and the third day I am perfected. Howbeit I must go on my way to-day and to-morrow and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem.

b O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killest the prophets, and stonest them that are sent unto her! how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her own brood under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: and I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

§ 102 AGAIN CENSURED FOR SABBATH HEALING

Matt 12:11-12

D And he said unto them, What man shall there be of you, that shall have one sheep, and if this fall into a pit on the sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? How much then is a man of more value than a sheep! (§133 D)

Luke 14:1-6

A And it came to pass, when he went into the house of one of the rulers of the Pharisees on a sabbath to eat bread, that they were watching him. And behold, there was before him a certain man which had the dropsy.

b And he answering spake unto the lawyers and Pharisees, saying, Is it lawful to heal on the sabbath, or not? But they held their peace. c And he took him, and healed him, and let him go.

D And he said unto them, Which of you shall have an ass or an ox fallen into a well, and will not straightway draw him up on a sabbath day?

E And they could not answer again unto these things.

ERV margin: 1 Greek recline 2 Greek demons 3 Some ancient authorities omit desolate 4 Many ancient authorities read a son: see Luke 13:15


H But many shall be last that are first; and first that are last. (§117 N = Mt 19:30)

H But many that are first shall be last; and the last first. (§117 N = Mk 10:31)

b Wherefore it is lawful to do good on the sabbath day. (§33 B = Mt 12:12)

b And saith unto them, Is it lawful on the sabbath day to do good, or to do harm? to save a life, or to kill? But they held their peace. (§33 B = Mk 3:4)

b And Jesus said unto them, I ask you. Is it lawful on the sabbath to do good, or to do harm? to save a life, or to destroy it? (§33 B = Lk 6:9)

112


§ 103  TEACHINGS AT THE TABLE OF A PHARISEE

MATTHEW 22:1-10

Luke 14:7-24

A And he spake a parable unto those which were hidden, when he marked how they chose out the chief seats; saying unto them, When thou art bidden of any man to a marriage feast, sit not down in the chief seat; lest haply a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him, and he that bade thee and him shall come and say to thee, Give this man place; and then thou shalt begin with shame to take the lowest place. But when thou art bidden, go and sit in the lowest place; that when he that hath bidden thee cometh, he may say to thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have glory in the presence of all that sit at meat with thee.

B For every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

C And he said to him also that had bidden him, When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, nor thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours; lest haply they also bid thee again, and a recompense be made thee. But when thou makest a feast, bid the poor, the maimed, the lame, and the blind. And thou shalt be blessed; because they have not wherewith to recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed in the resurrection of the just.

D And when one of them that sat at meal with him heard these things, he said unto him, Blessed is he that shall eat bread in the kingdom of God.

E But he said unto him, A certain man made a great supper; and he bade many: and he sent forth his servant at supper time to say to them that were bidden, Come; for all things are now ready.

F And they all with one consent began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a field, and I must needs go out and see it: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have married a wife, and therefore I cannot come. And the servant came, and told his lord these things.

G But the king was wroth; and he sent his armies, and destroying those murderers, and burned their city.

H Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore unto the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage feast.

---

ERV margin: 1 Greek recline not 2 Greek bondservants 3 Greek bondservant

b For every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; but he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. (§114 b = Lk 18:14)

b And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever shall humble himself shall be exalted. (§132 b = Mt 23:12)
§ 104 THE COSTS OF DISCIPLESHIP

MATT 22
And those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was filled with guests. (§190.L-O)

LUKE 14
what thou didst command is done, and yet there is room. And the lord said unto the servant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and constrain them to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.

MATTHEW

B He that loveth father or mother more than me is not worthy of me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me.

C And he that doth not take his cross and follow after me, is not worthy of me. (§57 MN)

LUKE 14:25-35
A Now there went with him great multitudes: and he turned, and said unto them,
B If any man come unto me, and hateth not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple.
C Whosoever doth not bear his own cross, and come after me, cannot be my disciple.
D For which of you desiring to build a tower, doth not first sit down and count the cost, whether he have wherewith to complete it? Lest haply, when he hath laid a foundation, and is not able to finish all that he had in view to build, he be mocked of all. This man began to build, and was not able to finish. Or what king, as he goeth to encounter another king in war, will not sit down first and take counsel whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an embassy, and asketh conditions of peace. So therefore whosoever he be of you that renounceth not all that he hath, he cannot be my disciple.

ERV margin: x Greek bond-servants  y Greek bond-servant  z Some ancient authorities omit to hear

E Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out and trodden under foot of men. (§36 K.L)

F He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. (§41 H)

G Salt therefore is good: but if the salt have lost its savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? It is fit neither for the land nor for the dunghill:

F He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

114
CHAPTER XVI
MANY TRUTHS TAUGHT IN PARABLES

§ 105 PARABLES ON THE WORTH OF SINNERS

Matt 18:12-14

Luke 15:1-32

A. Now all the publicans and sinners were drawing near unto him for to hear him. And both the Pharisees and the scribes murmured, saying, This man receiveth sinners, and eateth with them.

And he spake unto them this parable, saying, 3

B. What man of you, having a hundred sheep, and having lost one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and his neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost. I say unto you, that even so there shall be joy in heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine righteous persons, which need no repentance.

C. Or what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a lamp, and sweep the house, and seek diligently until she find it? And when she hath found it, she calleth together her friends and neighbours, saying, Rejoice with me, for I have found the piece which I had lost. Even so, I say unto you, there is joy in the presence of the angels of God over one sinner that repenteth.

D. And he said, A certain man had two sons: and the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of thy substance that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country; and there he wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that country; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to one of the citizens of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have been filled with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. But when he came to himself he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish here with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight: I am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to
Luke 15

his father. But while he was yet afar off, his father saw him, and was moved with compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight: I am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth quickly the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: and bring the fatted calf, and kill it, and let us eat, and make merry: for this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard music and dancing. And he called to him one of the servants, and inquired what these things might be. And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. But he was angry, and would not go in: and his father came out, and intreated him. But he answered and said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, and I never transgressed a commandment of thine: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: but when this thy son came, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou kill'dst for him the fatted calf. And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that is mine is thine. But it was meet to make merry and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

§ 106 PARABLE OF THE STEWARD

Luke 16:1-12

And he said also unto the disciples, There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he was wasting his goods. And he called him, and said unto him, What is this that I hear of thee? render the account of thy stewardship: for thou canst be no longer steward. And the steward said within himself, What shall I do, seeing that my lord taketh away the stewardship from me? I have not strength to dig; to beg I am ashamed. I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. And calling to him each one of his lord's debtors, he said to the first, How much owest thou unto my lord? And he said, A hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bond, and sit down quickly and write fifty. Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, A hundred measures of wheat. He saith unto him, Take thy bond, and write fourscore. And his lord commended him the unrighteous steward because he had done wisely: for the sons of this wicked world are for their own generation.

ERV margin:
1 Greek kissed him much 2 Some ancient authorities add make me as one of thy hired servants: see verse 10 3 Greek bondslaves 4 Greek Child 5 Greek bush, the bath being a Hebrew measure: see Ezekiel 45:10, 11, 14 6 Greek writings 7 Greek cor, the cor being a Hebrew measure: see Ezekiel 45:14 8 Greek the steward of unrighteousness 9 Or age

116
Luke 16

wiser than the sons of the light. And I say 9 unto you, Make to yourselves friends by means of the mammon of unrighteousness; that, when it shall fall, they may receive you into the eternal tabernacles. He that is faithful in a10 very little is faithful also in much: and he that is unrighteous in a very little is unrighteous also in much. If therefore ye have not been faith-11 ful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches? And if12 ye have not been faithful in that which is another's, who will give you that which is your own?

§ 107 SEVERAL SAYINGS OF JESUS

Matthew

A No man can serve two masters: for either he 5 will hate the one, and love the other; or else he24 will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye can- not serve God and mammon. (§8c)

C And from the days of John the Baptist until11 now the kingdom of heaven suffereth violence, and12 men of violence take it by force. For all the13 prophets and the law prophesied until John. (§41 f)

D For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and 5: earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no18 wise pass away from the law, till all things be accomplished. (§50)

E* But I say unto you, that every one that 5: putteth away his wife, saving for the cause of12 fornication, maketh her an adulteress: and who-soever shall marry her when she is put away committeth adultery. (§17 E)

Luke 16:13–18

A No 3 servant can serve two masters: for13 either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.

B And the Pharisees, who were lovers of4 money, heard all these things; and they scoffed at him. And he said unto them, Ye are they5 that justify yourselves in the sight of men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is exalted among men is an abomination in the sight of God.

C The law and the prophets were16 until John: from that time the gospel of the kingdom of God is preached, and every man entereth violently into it.

D But it is easier for17 heaven and earth to pass away, than for one tittle of the law to fall.

E* Every one that putteth18 away his wife, and marrieth another, committieth adultery: and he that marrieth one that is put away from a husband committeth adultery.

§ 108 PARABLE OF THE RICH MAN AND THE BEGGER

Luke 16:19–31

Now there was a certain rich man, and he19 was clothed in purple and fine linen, 4 fair ing sumptuously every day: and a certain beggar20 named Lazarus was laid at his gate, full of sores, and desiring to be fed with the crumbs that fell21 from the rich man’s table; yea, even the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass,22 that the beggar died, and that he was carried away by the angels into Abraham’s bosom: and the rich man also died, and was buried. And23 in Hades he lifted up his eyes, being in tor-
Luke 16

ments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, 24 Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am in anguish in this flame. But Abraham said, 25 25 Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and Lazarus in like manner evil things: but now here he is comforted, and thou art in anguish. And beside 26 all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed, that they which would pass from hence to you may not be able, and that none may cross over from thence to us. And he said, 27 I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house; for I have 28 five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. But Abraham saith, They have Moses and the 29 prophets; let them hear them. And he said, 30 Nay, father Abraham; but if one go to them from the dead, they will repent. And he said 31 unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, if one rise from the dead.

§ 109 SEVERAL SAYINGS OF JESUS

Matthew 18

A Woe unto the world because of occasions of stumbling! for it must needs be that the occasions come; but woe to that man through whom the occasion cometh! (78 K)

B But whoso shall cause one of these little ones to stumble, it is profitable for him that a great millstone should be hanged about his neck, and that he should be sunk in the depth of the sea. (78 K)

C And if thy brother sin against thee, go, show him his fault between thee and him alone; if he hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. (78 K)

D Then came Peter, and said to him, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? until seven times? Jesus saith unto him, 28 I say not unto thee, Until seven times; but, Until seventy times seven. (78 V)

Luke 17:1–6

A And he said unto his disciples, It is impossible but that occasions of stumbling should come: but woe unto him through whom they come!

B It was well for him if a millstone were 2 hanged about his neck, and he were thrown into the sea, rather than that he should cause one of these little ones to stumble.

C Take heed to yourselves: if thy brother sin, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.

D And if he sin against thee seven times in the day, and seven times turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.

E And the apostles said unto the Lord, Increase our faith.

F And the Lord said, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye would say unto this sycamine tree, Be thou rooted up, and be thou planted in the sea; and it would have obeyed you.
§ 110 PARABLE ON DUTY

LUKE 17:7-10

But who is there of you, having a servant plowing or keeping sheep, that will say unto him, when he is come in from the field, Come straightway and sit down to meat; and will not rather say unto him, Make ready where- with I may sup, and gird thyself, and serve me, till I have eaten and drunken; and afterward thou shalt eat and drink? Doth he thank the servant because he did the things that were commanded? Even so ye also, when ye shall have done all things that are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants; we have done that which it was our duty to do.

§ 111 THE HEALING OF THE LEPERS

LUKE 17:11-19

A And it came to pass, as they were on the way to Jerusalem, that he was passing through the midst of Samaria and Galilee.

B And as he entered into a certain village, there met him ten men that were lepers, which stood afar off: and they lifted up their voices, saying, Master, have mercy on us. And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go and shew yourselves unto the priests. And it came to pass, as they went, they were cleansed. And one of them, when he saw that he was healed, turned back, with a loud voice glorifying God; and he fell upon his face at his feet, giving him thanks: and he was a Samaritan. And Jesus answering said, Were not the ten cleansed? But where are the nine? Were there none found that returned to give glory to God, save this stranger? And he said unto him, Arise, and go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole.

§ 112 THE DAY OF THE SON OF MAN

MATTHEW 24

LUKE 17:20-37

A And being asked by the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God cometh, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: neither shall they say, Lo, here; or, Lo, there! for lo, the kingdom of God is within you.

B And he said unto the disciples, The days will come when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it.

c & And they shall say to you, Lo, there! Lo, here! go not away, nor follow after them: for as the lightning, when it lighteth out of the

ERV margin: 1 Greek bond servant 2 Greek bond servants 3 Or as he was 4 Or between 5 Or There 6 Or alien 7 Or saved thee 8 Or in the midst of you 9 Or, them

OT references: Lk 17:12 = Leviticus 13:45-46 Lk 17:14 = Leviticus 13:49 and 14:2-3

c Compare §134 portion d

c Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is the Christ; or, Here; believe it not. (§135 A = Mt 24:23)

c And then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is the Christ; or, Lo, there; believe it not. (§135 A = Mk 13:21)
Matt 24
the lightning cometh forth from the east, and is seen even unto the west; so shall be the coming of the Son of man. (§135 CD)

D. Compare §72A and attached references

E. And as were the days of Noah, so shall be the coming of the Son of man. For as in those days39 which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and 39 they knew not until the flood came, and took them all away;

G. so shall be the coming of the Son of man. (§135 LM)

H. Compare with portions P and Q of §134

J. He that findeth his 4 life shall lose it; and 40 he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. 39 (§170)

K. Then shall two men be in the field; one is 24: taken, and one is left: two women shall be grinding at the mill; one is taken, and one is left. 41 (§135 N)

M. Wheresoever the carcasse is, there will the eagles be gathered together. (§135 E)
LUKE 18
this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest she "wear me out by her continual coming.

b And the Lord said, Hear what "the unrighteous judge saith. And shall not God avenge his elect, which cry to him day and night, and he is longsuffering over them? I say unto you, that he will avenge them speedily. Howbeit when the Son of man cometh, shall he find "faith on the earth?

§ 114 PARABLE OF THE PUBLICAN AND THE PHARISEE

LUKE 18:9–14

A And he spake also this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and set all others at nought: Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. Thethe Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as the rest of men, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week; I give tithes of all that I get. But the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote his breast, saying, God, be merciful to me a sinner. I say unto you, This man went down to his house justified rather than the other:

b for every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; but he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

ERV margin: 1 Greek bruise 2 Greek the judge of unrighteousness 3 Or the faith 4 Greek the rest 5 Or be propitiated 6 Or the sinner

b For every one that exalteth himself shall be humbled; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. (§103 b = Lk 14:11)

b And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever shall humble himself shall be exalted. (§132 b = Mt 23:12)
CHAPTER XVII
TEACHING AND JOURNEYING ON TO JERUSALEM

§ 115 TEACHINGS ABOUT DIVORCE

MATTHEW 19:3-12
A And there came unto him 3 Pharisees, tempting him, and saying, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?
B And he answered and said,
C Compare portion E below

MARK 10:2-12
A And there came unto him 2 Pharisees, and asked him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife? tempting him.
B And he answered and said unto them,
C What did Moses command you? And they said, 4 Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put her away. But Jesus said 5 unto them, For your hardness of heart he wrote you this commandment.
D But from the beginning of the creation, Male and female made he them. For this cause shall 7 a man leave his father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife; and the twain shall become one flesh? So that they are no more twin, but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.
E They say unto him, Why then did Moses command to give a bill of divorcement, and to put her away? He saith unto them, Moses for your hardness of heart suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it hath not been so.
F I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and he that marrieth another, committeth adultery.

ERV margin: 1 Many authorities, some ancient, insert the 2 Some ancient authorities read created 3 Some ancient authorities omit and shall cleave to his wife 4 Some ancient authorities read saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress: as in Matthew 5:32 5 The following words, to the end of the verse, are omitted by some ancient authorities

OT references:
Mt 19:4 and Mk 10:6 = Genesis 1:27
Mt 19:5 and Mk 10:7-8 = Genesis 2:24
Mt 19:7 and Mk 10:4 = Deuteronomy 24:1

F But I say unto you, that every one that putteth away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, maketh her an adulteress: and whosoever shall marry her when she is put away committeth adultery. (§37) = Mt 5:32
F Every one that putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and he that marrieth one that is put away from a husband committeth adultery. (§105) = Lk 16:18

123
Matt 19
rieth her when she is put away
committh adultery.

Mark 10
adultery against her: and if
she herself shall put away her
husband, and marry another,
she committh adultery.

G The discipes say unto him, If the
case of the man is so with his
wife, it is not expedient to
marry. But he said unto them,
All men cannot receive
this saying, but they to whom
it is given. For there are
eunuchs, which were so born
from their mother's womb:
and there are eunuchs, which
were made eunuchs by men:
and there are eunuchs, which
made themselves eunuchs for
the kingdom of heaven's sake.
He that is able to receive it,
let him receive it.

§ 116 ATTITUDE OF JESUS TOWARD CHILDREN

Matt 19:13-15
A Then were there brought unto
him little children, that he
should lay his hands on them,
and pray: and the discipes rebuked them.

B But Jesus said, Suffer the little
children, and forbid them not, to
come unto me: for of such is the
kingdom of heaven.

C Verily I say unto you, Ex-cept ye turn
and become as little children, ye shall in no wise
enter into the kingdom of heaven. (\$8D)

D And he laid his hands on them, and
departed thence.

Mark 10:13-16
A And they brought unto him little children, that he
should touch them: and the discipes rebuked them.

B But when Jesus saw it, he was
moved with indignation, and
said unto them, Suffer the
little children to come unto me;
forbid them not: for of such is the
kingdom of God.

C Verily I say unto you, Who ever shall not receive the
kingdom of God as a little child, he shall in no wise enter
therein.

D And he took them in his arms, and blessed them,
laying his hands upon them.

Luke 18:15-17
A And they brought unto him also their babes, that he
should touch them: but when the discipes saw it, they re-
buked them.

B But Jesus called them unto him, saying, Suffer the
little children to come unto me, and forbid them not:
for of such is the kingdom of God.

C Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the
kingdom of God as a little child, he shall in no wise enter
therein.

§ 117 RELATION OF RICHES TO ETERNAL LIFE

Matt 19:16-30
A And behold, one came to him and said, Master, what
good thing shall I do, that I
may have eternal life?

B He said unto him, Why askest thou me concerning that which
is good? One there is who is good:

Mark 10:17-31
A And as he was going forth into the way, there ran one to
him, and kneeled to him, and
asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit
eternal life?

B He said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good
save one, even God.

Luke 18:18-30
A And a certain ruler asked him, saying, Good Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life?

B And Jesus said unto him, Why callest thou me good? none is good, save one, even God.

ERV margin: 1 Or Teacher 2 Some ancient authorities read Good Master: see Mark 10:17 and Luke 18:18
3 Or on his way 4 Some ancient authorities read Why callest thou me good? None is good save one, even God: see
Mark 10:19 and Luke 18:19

124
But when the young man heard the saying, he went away sorrowful: for he was one that had great possessions.

And Jesus saith unto his disciples, Verily I say unto you, It is hard for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven.

And again I say unto you, It is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

And when the disciples heard it, they were astonished exceedingly, saying, Who then can be saved? And Jesus looking upon them said to them, With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible.

Then answered Peter and said unto him, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee; what then shall we have?

And Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you,
§ 117

RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

Matt 19

that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

Mark 10

Jesus said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or children, or lands, for my name’s sake, but shall receive a hundredfold, and shall inherit eternal life.

Luke 18

And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or wife, or brethren, or parents, or children, for the kingdom of God’s sake, who shall not receive manifold more in this time, and in the world to come eternal life.

§ 118 PARABLE OF THE HOUSEHOLDER AND THE LABOURERS

Matt 20:1-16

A For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is a householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing in the marketplace idle; and to them he said, Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth and the ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing; and he saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard. And when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and pay them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first. And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. And when the first came, they supposed that they would receive more; and they likewise received every man a penny. And when they received it, they murmured against the householder, saying, These last have spent but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden of the day and the scorching heat. But he answered and said to one of them, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny? Take up that which is thine, and go thy way; it is my will to give unto this

Luke

§ 115

ERV margin: 1 Or I appoint unto you, even as my Father appointed unto me a kingdom, that ye may eat and drink, etc. 2 Many ancient authorities add or wife: as in Luke 18:29. 3 Some ancient authorities read manifold 4 Or age 5 The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence halfpenny 6 Or hos wind

N So the last shall be first, and the first last. (§ 118 B = N And behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last. (§ 100 N = Lk 13:30)
Matt 20
last, even as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me\(^{15}\) to do what I will with mine own? or is thine eye evil, because I am good?
\(^{16}\) be first, and the first last.

So the last shall\(^{16}\) be first, and there shall be last which shall be first.\(^{30}\) and there are first which shall be last. (§1067)

§ 119 JESUS FORECASTS EVENTS AT JERUSALEM

Matt 20:17-19
\(A\) And as Jesus was going up\(^ {17}\) to Jerusalem,

\(B\) he took the twelve disciples apart, and in the way he said unto them,

\(C^0\) Behold, we go up to Jerusalem;

\(E^0\) and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and scribes; and they shall condemn him to death,

\(F^0\) and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles to mock, and to scourg, and to crucify: and the third day he shall be raised up.

Mark 10:32-34
\(A\) And they were in the way,\(^ {32}\) going up to Jerusalem; and Jesus was going before them; and they were amazed; 'and they that followed were afraid.

\(B\) And he took again the twelve, and began to tell them the things that were to happen unto him, saying,

\(C^0\) Behold, we go up to Jerusalem;

\(E^0\) and the Son of man shall be delivered unto the chief priests and the scribes; and they shall condemn him to death,

\(F^0\) and shall deliver him unto the Gentiles: and they shall mock him, and shall spit upon him, and shall scourg him, and shall kill him; and after three days he shall rise again.

Luke 18:31-34
\(B\) And he took unto him the twelve, and said unto them,

\(C^0\) Behold, we go up to Jerusalem,

\(D^0\) and all the things that are written by the prophets shall be accomplished unto the Son of man.

\(F^0\) For he shall be\(^ {33}\) delivered up unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and shamefully entreated, and spit upon: and they shall\(^ {34}\) scourg and kill him; and the third day he shall rise again.

\(G\) And they understood none\(^ {34}\) of these things; and this saying was hid from them, and they perceived not the things that were said.

§ 120 TEACHING ON STANDARDS OF GREATNESS

Matt 20:20-28
\(A\) Then came to him the\(^ {20}\) mother of the sons of Zebedee with her sons, worshipping him, and asking a certain thing of him.

\(B\) And he said\(^ {21}\) unto her, What wouldst thou? She saith unto him, Command that these my two sons may sit, one on thy right hand, and one on thy left hand, in thy kingdom.

Mark 10:35-45
\(A\) And there come near unto\(^ {35}\) him James and John, the sons of Zebedee, saying unto him, Master, we would that thou shouldest do for us whatsoever we shall ask of thee.

\(B\) He saith unto them, What would ye that I should do for you? And they said unto him, Grant\(^ {37}\) unto us that we may sit, one on thy right hand, and one on thy left hand, in thy glory.

Luke 22:24-27
\(B\) And there arose also a con-\(^ {24}\) tention among them, which of them is accounted to be greatest.

ERV margin: 1 Or but some as they followed were afraid 2 Or through 3 Or Teacher 4 Greek greater

\(B\) But many shall be last\(^ {30}\) that are first; and first\(^ {31}\) that are last. (§117 N = Mt 19:30)\(B\) But many that are first shall be last; and the last first. (§117 N = MK 10:31)

\(^{CEP}\) For other records of these forecasts, compare §72 A and attached references

\(^{D}\) Compare §74 portion 2

127
Matt 20
But Jesus answered and said, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink the cup that I am about to drink?

c But Jesus said unto them, Ye know not what ye ask. Are ye able to drink the cup that I drink?

Mark 10

Luke 22

And they said unto him, We are able. He saith unto them, My cup indeed ye shall drink:

or to be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with?

And they said unto him, We are able. And Jesus said unto them, The cup that I drink ye shall drink;

and with the baptism that I am baptized withal shall ye be baptized:

sit on my right hand or on my left hand is not mine to give: but it is for them for whom it hath been prepared.

But I And when they heard it, they were moved with indignation concerning the two brethren.

And when the ten heard it, they began to be moved with indignation concerning James and John.

I called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the rulers of the Gentiles lord it over them, and their great ones exercise authority over them.

But Jesus called them to him, and saith unto them, Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles lord it over them; and their great ones exercise authority over them.

J But not so shall it be among you: but whosoever would be great among you shall be your minister: and whosoever shall be first among you shall be your servant:

J But it is not so among you: but whosoever would become great among you, shall be your minister: and whosoever would be first among you, shall be your servant of all.

K even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

K For verily the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

§ 131

THE BLIND BEGGAR OF JERICHO

Matt 20:29-34
A And as they went out from Jericho, a great multitude followed him. And behold, two blind men sitting by the way side,

Mark 10:46-52
A And they come to Jericho; and as he went out from Jericho, with his disciples and a great multitude, the son of Timeus, Bartimeus, a blind

Luke 18:35-43
A And it came to pass, as he drew nigh unto Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the way side begging:

ERV margin: 1 Or servant 2 Greek bond servant 3 Greek reclineth

But I came to cast fire upon the earth; and what will I, if it is already kindled?

with; and how am I straitened till it be accomplished! (Rev 22:19)

Compare also portion B below

Compare portion A above and attached references

J Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

J If any man will be first, he shall be last of all, and minister of all. (Col 1:18)

K For he that is least among you all, the same is great. (Rev 3:20)

J But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant. (Lk 18:17)

* For another Matthew account of similar general content, compare §53 A

128
**Matt 20**

B when they heard that Jesus was passing by, cried out, saying, Lord, have mercy on us, thou son of David.

C And the multitude rebuked them, that they should hold their peace: but they cried out the more, saying, Lord, have mercy on us, thou son of David.

D And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I should do unto you?

E They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened. And Jesus, being moved with compassion, touched their eyes:

F and straightway they received their sight, and followed him.

**Mark 10**

beggar, was sitting by the way side.

B And when he heard that it was Jesus of Nazareth, he began to cry out, and say, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.

C And many rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried out the more, saying, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.

D And Jesus stood still, and said, Call ye him. And they call the blind man, saying unto him, Be of good cheer: rise, he calleth thee. And he, casting away his garment, sprang up, and came to Jesus. And Jesus answered him, and said, What wilt thou that I should do unto thee?

E And the blind man said unto him, Rabboni, that I may receive my sight. And Jesus said unto him, Go thy way; thy faith hath made thee whole.

F And straightway he received his sight, and followed him in the way.

**Luke 18**

B and hearing a multitude going by, he inquired what this meant. And they told him, that Jesus of Nazareth passeth by.

C And he cried, saying, Jesus, thou son of David, have mercy on me.

D And they that went before rebuked him, that he should hold his peace: but he cried out the more a great deal, saying, Thou son of David, have mercy on me.

E And he said, Lord, that I may receive my sight. And Jesus said unto him, Receive thy sight: thy faith hath made thee whole.

F And immediately he received his sight, and followed him, glorifying God:

G and all the people, when they saw it, gave praise unto God.

§ 122 THE RICH PUBLICAN OF JERICHO

**Luke 19:1-10**

And he entered and was passing through Jericho. And behold, a man called by name Zacchæus; and he was a chief publican, and he was rich. And he sought to see Jesus who was passing through the midst of the town, and could not for the crowd, because he was little of stature. And he ran on before, and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him: for he was to pass that way. And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up, and said unto him, Zacchæus, make haste, and come down; for to-day I must abide at thy house. And he made haste, and came down, and received him joyfully. And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, He is gone in to lodge with a publican and a sinner. And Zacchæus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have wrongfully exacted aught of any man, I restore fourfold. And Jesus said unto him, To-day is salvation come to this house; and some good man he was, and some sinner he was.
salvation come to this house, forasmuch as he also is a son of Abraham. For the Son of man came to seek and to save that which was lost.

LUKE 19

A And as they heard these things, he added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they supposed that the Kingdom of God was immediately to appear.

B He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called ten servants of his, and gave them ten pounds, and said unto them, Trade ye herewhilst till I come.

C But his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassage after him, saying, We will not that this man reign over us.

D Straightway he that received the five talents went and traded with them, and made other five talents. In like manner he also that received the two gained other two. But he that received the one went away and digged in the earth, and hid his lord’s money.

E Now after a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and maketh a reckoning with them.

F And he that received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou delieverest unto me five talents: lo, I have gained other five talents. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

G And he also that received the two talents came and said, Lord, thou delieverest unto me two talents: lo, I have gained other two talents. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

H And he also that had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou didst not sow, and gathering where thou didst not labour: and I was afraid, and went away and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, thou hast thine own.

I But his lord an swered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I did not scatter; thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the bankers, and at my coming I should have received

ERV margin: 1 Greek bondservant 2 Mina, here translated a pound, is equal to one hundred drachmas: a drachma is a coin worth about eight pence 3 Greek bondservant 4 Greek the other 5 Or I should have gone and required

OT references: Lk 19:10 = Ezekiel 34:16
Matt 25

back mine own with interest. Take ye away²⁸ therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him that hath the ten talents.

For unto every one⁰⁰⁰ that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away.

And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§122 H-Q)

Luke 19

should have required it with interest? And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it unto him that hath the ten pounds. And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.

I say unto you, that unto every one that hath shall be given; but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away from him.

Howbeit these mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

And when he had thus spoken, he went on before, going up to Jerusalem.

ERV margin: 1 Greek bondservant

J For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath. (§47 H-Mt 13:12)

K And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§30 D-Mt 8:11-12)

J For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he hath. (§47 V-Mk 4:25)

K There shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth without. And they shall come from the east and west, and from the north and south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. (§100 Q-Lk 13:28-29)

K And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§48 L-Mt 13:42)

J For whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that which he thinketh he hath. (§47 V-Lk 8:18)

K And shall cast him into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§129 V-Mt 22:13)

K And shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (§136 D-Mt 24:51)

K And shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the unfaithful. (§94 L-Lk 13:46)
CHAPTER XVIII

CHALLENGE OF THE JERUSALEM LEADERS BY JESUS

§ 124 JESUS ENTERS JERUSALEM AS A POPULAR LEADER

MATTHEW 21:1-11
A And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and came unto Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then Jesus sent two disciples, saying unto them,
B Go into the village that is over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me. And if any one say unto you, Ye shall say, The Lord hath need of him; and straightway he will send them.
C Now this is come to pass, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,
Tell ye the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy King cometh unto thee,
Meek, and riding upon an ass,
And upon a colt the foal of an ass.

MARK 11:1-11
A And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he sendeth two of his disciples, and saith unto them,
B Go your way into the village that is over against you: and straightway as ye enter into it, ye shall find a colt tied, whereon no man ever yet sat: loose him, and bring him. And if any one say unto you, Why do ye this? say ye, The Lord hath need of him; and straightway he will send him back hither.

LUKE 19:29-44
A And it came to pass, when he drew nigh unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount that is called the mount of Olives, he sent two of the disciples, saying,
B Go your way into the village over against you; in the which as ye enter ye shall find a colt tied, whereon no man ever yet sat: loose him, and bring him. And if any one ask you, Why do ye loose him? thus shall ye say, The Lord hath need of him.

D And they went away, and found a colt tied at the door without in the open street; and they loose him. And certain of them that stood there said unto them, What do ye, loosing the colt? And they said unto them even as Jesus had said: and they let them go.
E And they bring the colt unto Jesus, and cast on him their garments; and he sat upon him.
F And many spread their garments upon the way; and others brake branches, which they had cut from the fields.

ERV margin: 1 Greek sendeth 2 Or again 3 Or through 4 Greek layers of looses

OT references: Mt 21:5 = Isaiah 62:11 and Zechariah 9:9

133
that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the son of David: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest.

H Compare §126 portions GH

And when10 he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was stirred, saying, Who is this? And the multitudes said, This is the prophet, Jesus, from Nazareth of Galilee.

And he entered into Jerusalem, into the temple; and when he had looked round about upon all things, it being now eventide, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

§ 128 JESUS RETURNS TO JERUSALEM

Matt 21:18-19

Now in the morning as he re-18 turned to the city, he hungered. And seeing a1 fig tree by the10 way side, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only; and he saith unto it, Let there be no fruit from thee henceforward for ever. (§127 A)

Mark 11:12-14

And on the morrow, when12 they were come out from Bethany, he hungered. And13 seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find anything thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for it was not the season of figs. And he answered and said14

ERV margin: 1 Greek powers 2 Or Teacher 3 Or O that thou hadst known 4 Greek pantokrator 5 Or a single

OT references: Mt 21:9 and Mk 11:9–10 and Lk 19:38 = Psalm 118:25–26 Lk 19:44 = Psalm 137:9

134
MARK 11
unto it, No man eat fruit from thee henceforward for ever.
And his disciples heard it.

§ 126  JESUS CASTS COMMERCE FROM THE TEMPLE

A And Jesus entered into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold the doves;

C he saith unto them, It is written, My house shall be called a house of prayer: but ye make it a den of robbers.

E Compare §130 portion I

F And the blind and the lame came to him in the temple: and he healed them.

G But when the chief priests and the scribes saw the wonderful things that he did, and the children that were crying in the temple and saying, Hosanna to the son of David: they were moved with indignation, and said unto him, Hearest thou what these are saying?

H And Jesus saith unto them, Yea: did ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise?

I And he left them, and went forth out of the city to Bethany, and lodged there.

MARK 11:15–19
A And they come to Jerusalem, and he entered into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and them that bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money-changers, and the seats of them that sold the doves;
B and he would not suffer that any man should carry a vessel through the temple.
C taught, and said unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called a house of prayer for all the nations? but ye have made it a den of robbers.

E And the chief priests and the scribes heard it, and sought how they might destroy him: for they feared him, for all the multitude was astonished at his teaching.

H Compare §124 portion H

LUKE 19:45–48
A And he entered into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold,

C saying unto them, It is written, And my house shall be a house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of robbers.

D And he was teaching daily in the temple.
E But the chief priests and the scribes and the principal men of the people sought to destroy him: and they could not find what they might do; for the people all hung upon him, listening.

G Compare §124 portion H

H Compare §124 portion H

ERV margin: 1 Many ancient authorities omit of God 2 Greek whenever evening came 3 Some ancient authorities read they

OT references: Mt 21:13 and Mk 11:17 and Lk 19:46 = Isaiah 56:7 and Jeremiah 7:11 Mt 21:16 = Psalm 8:2

135
FAITH AS A POWER

Matt 21:18-22
A Now in the morning as he returned to the city, he hungered. And seeing a fig tree by the way side, he came to it, and found nothing thereon, but leaves only; and he saith unto it, Let there be no fruit from thee henceforward for ever.

B And immediately the fig tree withered away. And when the disciples saw it, they marvelled, saying, How did the fig tree immediately wither away?

C And Jesus answered, saying unto them, Verily I say unto you, If ye have faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do what is done to the fig tree, but even if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou taken up and cast into the sea, it shall be done.

D And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive.

Mark 11:20-25
A And on the morrow, when they were come out from Bethany, he hungered. And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves, he came, if haply he might find anything thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for it was not the season of figs. And he answered and said unto it, No man eat fruit from thee henceforward for ever. And his disciples heard it. (K132)

B And as they passed by in the morning, they saw the fig tree withered away from the roots. And Peter calling to remembrance saith unto him, Rabbi, behold, the fig tree which thou cursedst is withered away.

C And Jesus answered, saying unto them, Have faith in God. Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou taken up and cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that what he saith cometh to pass; he shall have it.

D Thereof I say unto you, All things whatsoever ye pray and ask for, believe that ye have received them, and ye shall have them.

ERV margin: 1 Or a single 2 Many ancient authorities add verse 26: But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your trespasses.

C And he saith unto them, Because of your little faith: for verily I say unto you, If ye have faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove. (§75 Mt 17:20)

E So shall also my heavenly Father do unto you, if ye forgive not every one his brother from your hearts. (§8X Mt 18:35)

And whensoever ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have aught against any one; that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses. (§25 Mt 6:15)

136
CHAPTER XIX

FINAL CONTEST OF JESUS WITH THE JEWISH RULERS

§ 128 JEWISH RULERS CHALLENGE THE AUTHORITY OF JESUS

MATT 21:23-27
A And when he was come into the temple, the chief priests and the elders of the people came unto him as he was teaching, and said, By what authority doest thou these things? and who gave thee this authority?

MARK 11:27-33
A And they came again to Jerusalem: and as he was walking in the temple, there came to him the chief priests, and the scribes, and the elders; and they said unto him, By what authority doest thou these things? or who gave thee this authority to do these things?

LUKE 20:1-8
A And it came to pass, on one of the days, as he was teaching the people in the temple, and preaching the gospel, there came upon him the chief priests and the scribes with the elders; and they spake, saying unto him, Tell us: By what authority doest thou these things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?

B And he answered them, saying, If I tell you, will ye not believe? But if I also ask you a question, and tell me: The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or from men?

B And Jesus said unto them, I will ask of you one question, and answer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do these things. The baptism of John, was it from heaven, or from men? answer me.

C And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him? But if we shall say, From men; we fear the multitude: for all hold John as a prophet.

C And they reasoned with themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven; he will say, Why then did ye not believe him? But should we say, From men—they feared the people: for all verily held John to be a prophet.

D And they answered Jesus and said, We know not. And Jesus saith unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

D And they answered Jesus and said, We know not. And Jesus saith unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do these things.

§ 129 PARABLES IN CONDEMNATION OF JEWISH LEADERS

MATT 21:28—22:14
A But what thinkest thou? A man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to-day in the vineyard. And he answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented himself, and went.

A But what thinkest thou? A man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to-day in the vineyard. And he answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented himself, and went.

B And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir: and went not.

B And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir: and went not.

Whether of the twain didst thou receive the inheritance?

Whether of the twain didst thou receive the inheritance?

ERV margin: 1 Greek word 2 Or But shall we say, From men? 3 Or for all held John to be a prophet indeed

4 Greek Child

137
Matt 21
the will of his father? They say; The first.

B Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you. For John3s came unto you in the way of righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye saw it, did not even repent yourselves afterward, that ye might believe him.

Mark 13
And he began to speak unto them in parables. A man planted a vineyard, and set a hedge about it, and digged a winepress in it, and built a tower, and let it out to husbandmen, and went into another country.

Luke 20
D And all the people when they heard, and the publicans, rejoiced, God being baptized with the baptism of John. But the Pharisees and the lawyers rejected for themselves the counsel of God, being not baptized of him. (b;4:1)

ERV margin: 1 Or having been 2 Or not having been 3 Greek bondservants 4 Greek bondservant 5 Or

the fruits of it

OT references: Mt 21:33 and Mk 12:1 and Lk 20:9 = Isaiah 5:1-2

138
unto other husbandmen, which shall render him the fruits in their seasons.

Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures,
The stone which the builders rejected,
The same was made the head of the corner:
This was from the Lord, And it is marvellous in our eyes?

Therefore say I unto you, The kingdom of God shall be taken away from you, and shall be given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.

And he that falleth on this stone shall be broken to pieces: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will scatter him as dust.

And when the chief priests and the Pharisees heard his parables, they perceived that he spake of them. And when they sought to lay hold on him, they feared the multitudes, because they took him for a prophet.

And Jesus answered and spake again in parables unto them, saying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a certain king, which made a marriage feast for his son, and sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the marriage feast: and they would not come. Again he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them that are bidden, Behold, I have made ready my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come to the marriage feast.

But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his own farm, another to his merchandise: and the rest laid hold on his servants, and entreated them shamefully, and killed them.

And when they heard it, they said, 'God forbid. But he looked on them, and said, What then is this that is written, The stone which the builders rejected, The same was made the head of the corner?'

Therefore say I unto you, Every one that falleth on this stone shall be broken to pieces: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will scatter him as dust.

And the scribes and the chief priests sought to lay hands on him in that very hour; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he spake the parable against them.

But he said unto him, A certain man made a great supper, and he bade many: and he sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the supper in time to come; for all things were now ready.

And they all with one consent began to make excuse. The first said unto him, I have bought a field, and I must needs go out and see it: I pray thee have me excused. And another said, I have bought five yoke of oxen, and I go to prove them: I

ERV margin: 1 Greek Be it not so  2 Some ancient authorities omit verse 44  3 Greek bondservants  4 Greek bondservants

OT references: Mt 21:42 and Mk 12:10-12 and Lk 20:17 = Psalm 118:22–23  Mt 21:44 and Lk 20:18 = Isaiah 8:14-15
Matt 22

N  But the king was wroth; and he sent his armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned their city.

O  Then saith he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they that were bidden were not worthy. Go ye therefore unto the partings of the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage feast. And those servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was filled with guests.

But when the king came in to behold the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: and he saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. Then the king said to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and cast him out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few chosen.

Luke

O  Then the master of the house being angry said to his servant, Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor and maimed and blind and lame. And the servant said, Lord, what thou didst command is done, and yet there is room. And the lord said unto him, Go out into the highways and hedges, and constrain them to come in, that my house may be filled. For I say unto you, that none of those men which were bidden shall taste of my supper.

§ 129 RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

§ 130 EFFORTS TO ACCUMULATE EVIDENCE AGAINST JESUS

Matt 22:15-40

A  Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might ensnare him in his talk. And they send to him their disciples, with the Herodians,

Mark 12:13-34

A  And they send unto him certain of the Pharisees and of the Herodians, that they might catch him in talk.


A  And they watched him, and sent forth spies, which feigned themselves to be righteous, that they might take hold of his speech, so as

ERV margin: 1 Greek bondservants 2 Greek bondservant 3 Or ministers

P  And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. ($130 \text{D} = \text{Mt 8:11-13}$)

P  And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. ($130 \text{A} = \text{Mt 25:41}$)

P  And shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. ($130 \text{B} = \text{Mt 25:41}$)

P  And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. ($130 \text{C} = \text{Mt 25:30}$)

P  There shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, in the kingdom of God, and yourselves cast forth without. And they shall come from the east and west, and from the north and south, and shall sit down in the kingdom of God. ($130 \text{D} = \text{Lk 13:28-30}$)

P  And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. ($130 \text{A} = \text{Mt 25:41}$)

P  And shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the unfaithful. ($130 \text{A} = \text{Lk 13:28}$)
Matt 22

B saying, 'Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, and carest not for any one: for thou regardest not the person of men. Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not?'

Mark 12

B And when they were come, they say unto him, 'Master, we know that thou art true, and carest not for any one: for thou regardest not the person of men, but of a truth teachest the way of God: Is it lawful to give tribute unto Caesar, or not? Shall we give, or shall we not give?'

Luke 20

B And they asked him, saying, 'Master, we know that thou sayest and teachest rightly, and acceptest not the person of any, but of a truth teachest the way of God: Is it lawful for us to give tribute unto Caesar, or not?'

ERV margin: 1 Or Teacher 2 The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence halfpenny 3 Greek saying 4 Greek shall perform the duty of a husband's brother to his wife: compare Deuteronomy 25:5 5 Greek seem

-OT references: Mt 22:24 and Mk 12:19 and Lk 20:29 = Deuteronomy 25:5-6 (compare Genesis 38:8)
not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God. For in
the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in mar-
rriage, but are as angels in heaven.

H But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have
ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, say-
ing, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and
the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of
the living.

I And when the multitudes heard it, they were aston-
ished at his teaching.

K Compare §131 portion D

L But the Pharisees, when they heard that he had put
the Sadducees to silence, gathered themselves together.
And one of them, a lawyer, asked him a question, tempt-
ing him, Master, which is the great commandment in the
law?

M And he said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the greatest and first commandment. And a second like unto it is, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.

N⁴⁰ On these two commandments hangeth the whole law, and the prophets.

ERV margin: 1 Or age 2 Many ancient authorities add of God 3 Or Teacher 4 And a second is like unto it, Thou shalt love etc. 5 Or The Lord is our God; the Lord is one 6 Greek from


N For this is the law and the prophets. (§132 = Mt 7:12)
Matt 22

Mark 12

Luke 20

said that he is one; and there is none other but he: and to 33 love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is much more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices.

P And when Jesus 34 saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God.

Q And no man after that durst ask him any question.

Q Compare §131 portion D

§ 131 THE PROBLEM OF THE CHRIST

Matt 22:41-46

Mark 12:35-37

Luke 20:41-44

A Now while the Pharisees 41 were gathered together, Jesus asked them a question, saying, 42 What think ye of the Christ? whose son is he? They say unto him, The son of David.

B He saith unto them, How 43 then doth David in the Spirit call him Lord, saying, The Lord said unto my 44 Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, Till I put thine enemies underneath thy feet? If David then calleth him 45 Lord, how is he his son?

D And 46 no one was able to answer him a word, neither durst any man from that day forth ask him any more questions.

B David himself said in the 46 Holy Spirit, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, Till I make thine enemies the footstool of thy feet. David himself calleth him 37 Lord; and whence is he his son?

C And 3 the common people heard him gladly.

B For David 43 himself saith in the book of Psalms, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, Till I make thine enemies the footstool of thy feet. David therefore calleth him 44 Lord, and how is he his son?

D Compare §130 portion Q

D Compare §130 portion K

ERV margin: 1 Some ancient authorities read underneath thy feet 2 Or the great multitude


I43
CHAPTER XX
DISCOURSE IN CONDEMNATION OF Scribes AND PHARISEES

§ 132 DISCOURSE IN CONDEMNATION OF Scribes AND PHARISEES

MATT 23:1-39
A Then spake Jesus to the multitudes and to his disciples, saying,
B "The scribes and the Pharisees sit on Moses' seat: all things therefore whatsoever they bid you, those do and observe: but do not ye after their works; for they say, and do not.
C Yea, they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with their finger.
D But all their works they do for to be seen of men: for they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, and love the chief place at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues, and the salutations in the marketplaces, and to be called of men, Rabbi.
E But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your teacher, and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father on the earth: for one is your Father, even the Christ. But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.

MARK 12:38-40
A And in his teaching he said,
B Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and to have salutations in the marketplaces, and chief seats in the synagogues, and chief places at feasts:
C which devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayers; these shall receive greater condemnation.

LUKE 20:45-47
A And in the hearing of all the people he said unto his disciples,
B Woe unto you lawyers also! for ye lade men with burdens grievous to be borne, and ye yourselves touch not the burdens with one of your fingers.
C Beware of the scribes, which desire to walk in long robes, and love salutations in the marketplaces, and chief seats in the synagogues, and chief places at feasts;
D which devour widows' houses, and for a pretense make long prayers: these shall receive greater condemnation.

ERV margin: 1 Many ancient authorities omit and grievous to be borne 2 Or even while for a pretense they make 3 Greek the heavenly 4 Greek greater 5 Or minister

OT references: Mt 23:5 = Exodus 23:9 and Numbers 15:38-39 and Deuteronomy 6:8 and 11:18

0 Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. (Mt 23:11 = Mt 18:4)
0 Not so shall it be among you: but whosoever would become great among you shall be your minister; and whosoever would be first among you shall be your servant. (Mt 20:26-27)
0 If any man would be first, he shall be last of all, and minister of all. (Mk 9:35)
0 But it is not so among you: but whosoever would become great among you, shall be your minister: and whosoever would be first among you, shall be servant of all. (Mk 10:43-44)
0 For he that is least among you all, the same is greatest. (Lk 9:48)
0 But ye shall not be so: but he that is the greater among you, let him become as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth serve. (Lk 22:26)
And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be humbled; and whosoever shall humble himself shall be exalted.

1 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye enter not in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering in to enter.

2 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte; and when he is become so, ye make him twofold more a son of hell than yourselves.

3 Woe unto you, ye blind guides, which say, Whosoever shall swear by the temple, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor. Ye fools and blind:

4 for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that hath sanctified the gold? And whosoever shall swear by the altar, it is nothing; but whosoever shall swear by the gift that is upon it, he is a debtor.

5 Ye blind: for whether is greater, the altar, or the temple that sanctifieth the gift? He therefore that sweareth by the altar, sweareth by it, and by all things thereon. And he that sweareth by the temple, sweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein. And he that sweareth by the heaven, sweareth by him that sitteth on the throne of God, and by him that sitteth thereon.

6 But woe unto you, Pharisees! for ye tithe mint and anise and cummin, and have left undone the weightier matters of the law, judgement, and mercy, and faith: these ye ought to have done, and not to have left the other undone. Ye blind guides, which strain out the gnat, and swallow the camel.
MATT 23
Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye
cleanse the outside of the cup and of the platter, but within
they are full of extortion and excess. Thou blind Pharisee,
cleanse first the inside of the cup and of the platter, that
the outside thereof may become clean also.

Luke 11
Now do ye Pharisees cleanse the outside of the cup
and of the platter; but your inward part is full of extortion
and wickedness. Ye foolish ones, did not he that made the
outside make the inside also? Howbeit give for alms those\nthings which are within; and behold, all things are clean
unto you. (KJV B)

Woe unto you! for ye are as the tombs which appear not,
and the men that walk over them know it not. (KJV B)

Woe unto you! for ye build the tombs of the prophets, and
your fathers killed them. So ye are witnesses and consent
unto the works of your fathers:

Q. Therefore also said the wise dom of God, I will send unto
them prophets and apostles; and some of them shall kill and
crucify; and some of them shall ye scourge in your syna-
gogues, and persecute from city to city: that upon you may
come all the righteous blood shed on the earth, from
the blood of Abel the righteous unto the blood of Zacha-

riah son of Barachiah, whom ye slew between the sanctuary
and the altar. Verily I say unto you, All these things shall
come upon this generation.

R Q Jerusalem, Jerusalem, which killeth the prophets, and
stoneth them that are sent unto her! how often

ERV margin: 1 Or ye can 2 Greek Gehenna 3 Greek house
OT references: Mt 23:35 and Lk 11:50-51 = Genesis 4:8 and 2 Chronicles 24:20-21

P For the record of a saying by John the Baptist somewhat similar to verse 33, compare §17M. The saying is
recorded of Jesus in §45N
Matt 23
would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

Luke
gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her own brood under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your house is left unto you desolate: and I say unto you, Ye shall not see me, until ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord. (§101B)

§ 133 THE TRUE TEST OF GIVING

Mark 12:41-44
A And he sat down over against the treasury, and beheld how the multitude cast money into the treasury: and many that were rich cast in much. And there came a poor widow, and she cast in two mites, which make a farthing.

B And he called unto him his disciples, and said unto them, Verily I say unto you, This poor widow cast in more than all they which are casting into the treasury: for they all did cast in of their superfluity; but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.

Luke 21:1-4
A And he looked up, and saw the rich men that were casting their gifts into the treasury. And he saw a certain poor widow casting in thither two mites.

B And he said, Of a truth I say unto you, This poor widow cast in more than they all: for all these did of their superfluity cast in unto the gifts: but she of her want did cast in all the living that she had.

ERV margin: 1 Some ancient authorities omit desolate 2 Greek brass 3 Greek one 4 Or and saw them that . . . treasury, and they were rich

CHAPTER XXI

DISCOURSE ON EVENTS OF THE FUTURE

§ 134 DISCOURSE ON EVENTS OF THE FUTURE

Matthew 24:1—25:46

A And Jesus went out from the temple, and was going on his way; and his disciples came to him to show him the buildings of the temple.

B But he answered and said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

C And as he sat on the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

D Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man lead you astray. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am the Christ; and shall lead many astray.

E And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for these things must needs come to pass; but the end is not yet.

F For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines and earthquakes in divers places. But all these things are the beginning of travail.

G But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to councils, and in their synagogues they will scourge you; yea and be confined fore governors and kings shall deliver you up to the synagogues and prisons, and to rulers, and over all the land for their sake.

Mark 13:1—37

A And as he went forth out of the temple, one of his disciples saith unto him, Master, behold, what manner of stones and what manner of buildings!

B And Jesus said unto him, Seest thou these great buildings? there shall not be left here one stone upon another, which shall not be thrown down.

C And as he sat on the mount of Olives over against the temple, Peter and James and John and Andrew asked him privately, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when these things are all about to be accomplished?

D And Jesus began to say unto them, Take heed that no man lead you astray. Many shall come in my name, saying, I am he; and shall lead many astray.

E And when ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars, be not troubled: these things must needs come to pass; but the end is not yet.

F For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: there shall be earthquakes in divers places; there shall be famines: these things are the beginning of travail.

G But take ye heed to your selves: for they shall deliver you up to councils; and in synagogues ye shall be beaten; and before governors and

Luke 21:5—38

A And as some spake of the temple, how it was adorned with goodly stones and offerings,

B he said, As for these things which ye behold, the days will come, in which there shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

C And they asked him, saying, Master, when therefore shall these things be? and what shall be the sign when these things are about to come to pass?

D he said, Take heed that ye be not led astray: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am he; and, The time is at hand: go ye not after them.

E And when ye shall hear of wars and tumults, be not terrified: for these things must needs come to pass first; but the end is not immediately.

F Then said he unto them, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be great earthquakes, and in divers places famines and pestilences; and there shall be terrors and great signs from heaven.

G But before all these things, they shall lay their hands on you, and shall persecute you, delivering you up to the synagogues and prisons,

ERV margin: 1 Or Teacher 2 Greek presence 3 Or the consummation of the age

OT references: Mt 24:7 and Mk 13:8 and Lk 21:10 = Isaiah 10:2

D Compare §135 portions ABC
Matt 24
ye be brought for my sake, for a testimony to them and to the Gentiles.
Then shall they deliver you up unto tribulation,
Compare portion N below
Compare §57 portion F

Mark 13
kings shall ye stand for my sake, for a testimony unto them.

Luke 21
'bringing you before kings and governors for my name's sake. It shall turn unto you for a testimony.'
Matt 24

P Compare portion Q below

Q let him that is on the house top not go down to take out the things that are in his house: and let him that is in the field not return back to take his cloke.

R But woe unto them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days! And pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on a sabbath: for then shall be great tribulation, such as hath not been from the beginning of the world until now, no, nor ever shall be.

S And except those days had been shortened, no flesh would have been saved: but for the elect’s sake those days shall be shortened.

Mark 13

P Compare portion Q below

Q and let him that is on the house top not go down, nor enter in, to take anything out of his house: and let him that is in the field not return back to take his cloke.

R But woe unto them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days! And pray ye that it be not in the winter. For those days shall be tribulation, such as there hath not been the like from the beginning of the creation which God created until now, and never shall be.

S And except the Lord had shortened the days, no flesh would have been saved: but for the elect’s sake, whom he chose, he shortened the days.

Luke 21

P and let them that are in the midst of her depart out; and let not them that are in the country enter therein.

Q In that day, he which shall be on the house top, and his goods in the house, let him not go down to take them away: and let him that is in the field likewise not return back. (§112 B)

R Woe unto them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days! for there shall be great distress upon the land, and wrath unto this people. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be taken captive into all the nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down under the feet of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled.

§ 135 DISCOURSE ON EVENTS OF THE FUTURE (continued)

A Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is the Christ, or, Here; believe it not.

B For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; so as to lead astray, if possible, even the elect. Behold, I have told you beforehand.

C If therefore they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the wilderness; go not forth: Behold, he is in the inner chambers; believe it not.

D For as the lightning cometh forth from the east, and is seen even unto the west; so shall be the coming of the Son of man.

A And then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is the Christ; or, Lo, there; believe it not:

B for there shall arise false Christs and false prophets, and shall shew signs and wonders, that they may lead astray, if possible, the elect. But take ye heed: behold, I have told you all things beforehand.

C Compare portion A above

D for as the lightning, when it is lighteneth out of the one part under the heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven; so shall the Son of man be in his day. (§112 C)

ERV margin: 1 Or earth 2 Or, him 3 Or, them 4 Greek presence 5 Some ancient authorities omit in his day

OT references: Mt 24:21 and Mk 13:29 = Daniel 12:1
Mt 24:24 and Mk 13:22 = Deuteronomy 13:1

a Compare §134 portion d
MATT 24
E Wherefore,88 ever the carcase is, there will the eagles be gathered together.
F But immediately, after the tribulation of those days, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:

G and30
H and they shall see the Son of man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. And he shall send forth his angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.
I Now from the fig tree learn: when her branch is now become tender, and putteth forth its leaves, ye know that the summer is nigh; even so ye also, when ye see all these things, know ye that he is nigh, even at the doors.
J Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all these things be accomplished. Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away.
K But of that day or that hour knoweth no one, not even the angels of heaven, neither the Son, but the Father only.
L And as7 the days of Noah, so shall be the coming of the Son of man. For as in those days8 which were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark,

MARK 13
F But in those days, after that tribulation, the sun shall be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall be falling from heaven, and the powers that are in the heavens shall be shaken.
H And then shall they see the Son of man coming in clouds with great power and glory. And then shall he send forth the angels, and shall gather together his elect from the four winds, from the uttermost part of the earth to the uttermost part of heaven.
I Now from the fig tree learn: when her branch is now become tender, and putteth forth its leaves, ye know that the summer is nigh; even so ye also, when ye see these things coming to pass, know ye that he is nigh, even at the doors.
J Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, until all these things be accomplished. Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.
K But of that day or that hour knoweth no one, not even the angels in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

LUKE 21
F And there shall be signs in the sun and moon and stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, in perplexity for the roaring of the sea and the winds; men fainting for fear, and for expectation of the things which are coming on the world: for the powers of the heavens shall be shaken.
H And then they shall see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. But when these things begin to come to pass, look up, and lift up your heads; because your redemption draweth nigh.
I And he spake to them parable: Behold the fig tree, and all the trees: when they now shall be budding, ye see it and know of your own selves that the summer is now nigh. Even so ye also, when ye see these things coming to pass, know ye that the Kingdom of God is nigh.
J Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, until all these things be accomplished. Heaven and earth shall pass away; but my words shall not pass away.

L And as it came to pass in the days of Noah, even so shall it be in the days of the Son of man. They ate, they drank, they married, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. (§112 E)
and they knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall be the coming of the Son of man.

Then shall two men be in the field; one is taken, and one is left: two women shall be grinding at the mill; one is taken, and one is left.

Watch therefore: for ye know not on what day your Lord cometh.

Compare the parable recorded in §136 portions H–R

Watch therefore: for ye know not when the time is.

It is as when a man, sojourning in another country, having left his house, and given authority to his servants, to each one his work, commanded also the porter to watch.

Compare the parable recorded in §136 portions E–G

Watch therefore: for ye know not when the Lord of the house cometh, whether at even, or at midnight, or at cockcrowing, or in the morning; lest coming suddenly he find you sleeping. And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.

And he left them, and went forth out of the city to Bethany, and lodged there.

And every day he was teaching in the temple; and every night he went out, and lodged in the mount that is called the mount of Olives. And all the people came early in the morning to him in the temple, to hear him.

**DISCOURSE ON EVENTS OF THE FUTURE (concluded)**

But know this, that if the master of the house had known what watch the thief was coming, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken through.

Therefore be ye also ready: for in an hour that ye think not the Son of man cometh.

Who then is faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath set over

ERV margin: 1 Greek presence 2 Some ancient authorities add verse 35: There shall be two men in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left 3 Some ancient authorities omit and pray 4 Greek bondservants 5 Greek whenever evening came 6 Some ancient authorities read they 7 Or But this ye know 8 Greek digged through 9 Greek bondservant 10 Or the faithful steward, the wise man whom, etc.
Matt 24-25

his household, to give them their food in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Verily I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath. But if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord tarrieth not; and shall begin to beat his fellow-servants, and shall eat and drink with the drunken; the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he expecteth not, and in an hour when he knoweth not, and shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the hypocrites:

there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Then shall the kingdom of heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the bridegroom. And five of them were foolish, and five were wise. For the foolish, when they took their lamps, took no oil with them: but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. Now while the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. But at midnight there was a cry, Behold, the bridegroom! Come ye forth to meet him. Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. And the foolish said unto the wise, Give us of your oil; for our lamps are going out. But the wise answered, saying, Peradventure there will not be enough for us and you: go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. And while they went away to buy, the bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage feast:

and the door was shut. Afterward come also the other virgins,

Mark

to give them their portion of food in due season? Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. Of a truth I say unto you, that he will set him over all that he hath. But if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and the maidservants, and to eat and drink, and to be drunken; the lord of that servant shall come in a day when he expecteth not, and in an hour when he knoweth not, and shall cut him asunder, and appoint his portion with the unfaithful. (Mark 13:33)

Compare the parable recorded in Mark 13:33 portion Q

Let your loins be girded about, and your lamps burning; and be ye yourselves like unto men waiting for their lord, when he shall return from the marriage feast; that, when he cometh and knocketh, they may straightway open unto him. Blessed are those servants, whom the lord when he cometh shall find watching: verily I say unto you, that he shall gird himself, and make them sit down to meat, and shall come and serve them. And if he shall come in the second watch, and if in the third, and find them so, blessed are those servants. (Mark 13:34–35)

When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to

ERV margin: 1 Greek bondservant 2 Or severely scourge him 3 Or torches 4 Greek bondservants

D And I say unto you, that many shall come from the east and the west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven: but the sons of the kingdom shall be cast forth into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matt 8:11–12)

D And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matt 13:42)

D And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matt 13:42)

D And cast him out into the outer darkness; there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matt 22:13)

D And cast ye out the unprofitable servant into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matt 25:30)
Matt 25  
saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. But he answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not.  

G Watch therefore, for ye know not the day nor the hour.  

H For it is as when a man, going into another country, called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, to another one; to each according to his several ability; and he went on his journey.  

J Straightway he that received the five talents went and traded with them, and made other five talents. In like manner he also that received the two gained other two. But he that received the one went away and digged in the earth, and hid his lord’s money.  

K Now after a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and maketh a reckoning with them.  

L And he that received the five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: lo, I have gained other five talents. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.  

M And he also that received the two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: lo, I have gained other two talents. His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will set thee  

Mark  

Luke  

stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us; and he shall answer and say to you, I know you not whence ye are. (v.100 D)  

H A certain nobleman went into a far country, to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. And he called ten servants of his, and gave them ten pounds, and said unto them, Trade ye herewith till I come.  

I But his citizens hated him, and sent an ambassador after him, saying, We will not that this man reign over us.  

K And it came to pass, when he was come back again, having received the kingdom, that he commanded these servants, unto whom he had given the money, to be called to him, that he might know what they had gained by trading.  

L And the first came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath made ten pounds more. And he said unto him, Well done, thou good servant: because thou wast found faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities.  

M the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath made five pounds. And he said unto him, also, Be thou also over five cities.
over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

he also that had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art a hard man, reaping where thou didst not sow, and gathering where thou didst not scatter: and I was afraid, and went away and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, thou hast thine own.

But his lord an- swered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful 'servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I did not scatter; thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the bankers, and at my coming I should have received back mine own with interest. Take ye away therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him that hath the ten talents.

For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not, even that which he hath shall be taken away.

And cast ye out the unprofitable 'servant into the outer darkness: there shall be the weeping and gnashing of teeth.

But when the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the angels with him, then shall he sit on the throne of his glory: and before him shall be gathered all the nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as the shepherd separateth the sheep from the goats: and he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left. Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come,
ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: for I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me in; naked, and ye clothed me: I was sick, and ye visited me: I was in prison, and ye came unto me. Then shall the righteous answer him, saying, Lord, when saw we thee an hungred, and fed thee? or athirst, and gave thee drink? And when saw we thee a stranger, and took thee in? or naked, and clothed thee? And when saw we thee sick, or in prison, and came unto thee? And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it unto one of these my brethren, even these least, ye did it unto me. Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into the eternal fire which is prepared for the devil and his angels: for I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave me no drink: I was a stranger, and ye took me not in; naked, and ye clothed me not; sick, and in prison, and ye visited me. Then shall he answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not unto one of these least, ye did it not unto me. And these shall go away into eternal punishment: but the righteous into eternal life.

§ 137 CONSPIRACY FOR THE ARREST OF JESUS

MATT 26:1-16
And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these words, he said unto his disciples, Ye know that after two days the passover cometh, and

MARK 14:1-11
Now after two days was the feast of the passover and the unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover, and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might

LUKE 22:1-6
Now the feast of unleavened bread drew nigh, which is called the Passover, and the chief priests and the scribes sought how they might

ERV margin: 1 Or Depart from me under a curse

OT references: Mt 25:45 = Daniel 12:2
Matt 26
the Son of man is delivered up
to be crucified. Then were
3 gathered together the chief
priests, and the elders of the
people, unto the court of the
high priest, who was called
Caiphias; and they took 4
concealment together that they
might take Jesus by subtilty,
and kill him. But they said, 5
Not during the feast, lest a
tumult arise among the people.

B Now when Jesus was in
Bethany, in the house of Si-
mon the leper, there came
unto him a woman having an
alabaster cruse of exceeding
precious ointment, and she
poured it upon his head, as he
sat at meat.
c But when the 8
disciples saw it, they had
indignation, saying, To what
purpose lie this waste? For 9
this ointment might have been
sold for much, and given to
the poor.

D But Jesus perceiv-
ing it said unto them, Why
trouble ye the woman? for
she hath wrought a good work
upon me. For ye have the
poor always with you; but me
ye have not always. For in
that she poured this ointment
upon my body, she did it to
prepare me for burial.

E Verily 10
I say unto you, Wheresoever
this gospel shall be preached
in the whole world, that also
whilch this woman hath done
shall be spoken of for a memo-
rial of her.

f Then one of the twelve,
who was called Judas Iscariot,
gone unto the chief priests,
and said, What are ye willing
to give me, and I will deliver
him unto you? And they
weighed unto him thirty
pieces of silver. And from
that time he sought oppor-
tunity to deliver him unto
them.

Mark 14
take him with subtilty, and
kill him: for they said, Not 3
during the feast, lest haply
there shall be a tumult of the
people.

B And while he was in Beth-
any in the house of Simon
the leper, as he sat at meat,
there came a woman having
an alabaster cruse of oint-
ment of spikenard very
costly; and she brake the
cruse, and poured it over his
head.
c But there were some 4
that had indignation among
themselves, saying, To what
purpose hath this waste of the
ointment been made? For 5
this ointment might have
been sold for above three hun-
dred pence, and given to
the poor. And they murmured
against her.

D But Jesus said, 6
Let her alone; why trouble ye
her? she hath wrought a good
work on me. For ye have the
poor always with you, and
whensoeuer ye will ye can do
them good: but ye me have
not always. She hath done 8
what she could: she hath
anointed my body aforehand
for the burying.

E And verily I 9
say unto you, Wheresoever
the gospel shall be preached
throughout the whole world,
that also which this woman
hath done shall be spoken of
for a memorial of her.

F And Judas Iscariot, who
that was one of the twelve,
gone away unto the chief
priests, that he might deliver
him unto them. And they,11
when they heard it, were glad,
and promised to give him
money. And he sought how
he might conveniently deliver
him unto them.

Luke 22
put him to death; for they
feared the people.

B Compare § 42 portion A

ERV margin. 1 Or a flask 2 Greek pistis nard, pistis being perhaps a local name: others take it to mean genuine; others, liquid 3 The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence halfpenny 4 Greek cast 5 Or these good tidings 6 Greek the one of the twelve 7 Or without tumult

OT references: Mt 26:15 = Zechariah 11:12

158
CHAPTER XXII

FINAL HOURS OF JESUS WITH HIS DISCIPLES

§ 138  THE PASSOVER WITH THE DISCIPLES

MATTHEW 26:17-29
A Now on the first day of unleavened bread, the disciples came to Jesus, saying, Where wilt thou that we make ready for thee to eat the passover?

B And he said, Go into the city to such a man, and say unto him, The Master saith, My time is at hand; I keep the passover at thy house with my disciples.

C And the disciples did as Jesus appointed them; and they made ready the passover.

D Now when even was come, he was sitting at meat with the twelve disciples; and as they were eating, he said,

E Verily I say unto you, that one of you shall betray me. And they were exceeding sorrowful, and began to say unto him every one, Is it I, Lord? And he answered and said, He that dipped his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me. The Son of man goeth, even as it is written of him: but woe unto that man through whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it if that man if he had not been born.

MARK 14:12-15
A And on the first day of unleavened bread, when they sacrificed the passover, his disciples say unto him, Where wilt thou that we go and make ready that thou mayest eat the passover?

B And he sendeth two of his disciples, and saith unto them, Go into the city, and there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him; and where soever he shall enter in, say to the goodman of the house, The Master saith, Where is my guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? And he will shew you a large upper room furnished and ready: and there make ready for us.

C And the disciples went forth, and came into the city, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

D And when it was evening, he cometh with the twelve. And as they sat and were eating, Jesus said,

E Verily I say unto you, One of you shall betray me, even he that eateth with me. They began to be sorrowful, and to say unto him one by one, Is it I? And he answered and said, He that dipped his hand with me in the dish, the same shall betray me. The Son of man goeth, even as it is written of him: but woe unto that man through whom the Son of man is betrayed! good were it if that man if he had not been born.

LUKE 22:7-30
A And the day of unleavened bread came, on which the passover must be sacrificed. And he sent Peter and John, saying, Go and make ready for us the passover, that we may eat. And they said unto him, Where wilt thou that we make ready?

B And he said unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there shall meet you a man bearing a pitcher of water: follow him into the house whereinto he goeth. And ye shall say unto the goodman of the house, The Master saith unto thee, Where is the guest-chamber, where I shall eat the passover with my disciples? And he will shew you a large upper room furnished: there make ready.

C And they went, and found as he had said unto them: and they made ready the passover.

D And when the hour was come, he sat down, and the apostles with him. And he said unto them,

E Compare portion K below

ERV margin: 1 Or Teacher 2 Many authorities, some ancient, omit disciples 3 Greek reclined 4 Greek

OT references: Mt 26:17 and Mk 14:12 and Lk 22:7 = Exodus 12:17-20 Mk 14:18 = Psalm 41:9

159
Matt 26
F And Judas, which be-35
trayed him, answered and
said, Is it I, Rabbi? He saith
unto him, Thou hast said.

Mark 14
H Compare portion J below

Luke 22
G With desire
I have desired to eat this pass-
over with you before I suffer:
for I say unto you, I will not16
eat it, until it be fulfilled in
the kingdom of God.

H And he27
received a cup, and when he
had given thanks, he said,
Take this, and divide it among
yourselves: for I say unto18
you, I will not drink from
henceforth of the fruit of the
vine, until the kingdom of
God shall come.

J And he took19
bread, and when he had given
thanks, he brake it, and gave
to them, saying, This is my
body which is given for you:
this do in remembrance of me.

J And he took23
a cup, and when he had given
thanks, he gave to them: and
they all drank of it. And he24
said unto them, This is my
blood of the covenant, which
is shed for many. Verily I25
say unto you, I will no more
drink of the fruit of the vine,
until that day when I drink
it new in the kingdom of God.

K Compare portion E above

K Compare portion E above

ERV margin:
1 Or a loaf
2 Some ancient authorities omit which is given for you . . . which is poured out for
you
3 Some ancient authorities read the cup
4 Or the testament
5 Many ancient authorities insert new
6 Some ancient authorities insert new
7 Or testament
8 Greek greater

OT references: Mt 26:28 and Mk 14:24 and Lk 22:20=Exodus 24:18 and Zechariah 9:11 and Jeremiah 31:32
and Leviticus 4:18-20

17 (Lk) The Lord Jesus in the night in which he was betrayed took bread; and when he had given thanks, he brake
it, and said, This is my body which is for you: this do in remembrance of me.
(1 Corinthians 11:23-24)

L In that hour came the disciples
unto Jesus, saying, Whom then is
greatest in the kingdom of heaven?
($78 A = Mt 18:27$)

L And they came to Capernaum:
and when he was in the house he
asked them, What were ye reason-
ing in the way? But they held their
peace: for they had disputed one
with another in the way, who was
the greatest. ($78 A = Lk 9:33-34$)

160
And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, that ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel. (Mt 26:35-40)
Matt 26:36-46
A And when they had sung a hymn, they went out unto the mount of Olives. (§139 A)
B They then cometh Jesus with them unto a place called Gethsemane, and saith unto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I go yonder and pray. And he took with him Peter and the two sons of Zebedee, and began to be sorrowful and sore troubled. Then saith he unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: abide ye here, and watch with me.
C And he went forward a little, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass away from me: nevertheless, not as I will, but as thou wilt.

Mark 14:32-42
A And when they had sung a hymn, they went out unto the mount of Olives. (§139 A)
B And they came unto the place which was named Gethsemane: and he saith unto his disciples, Sit ye here, while I pray. And he taketh with him Peter and James and John, and began to be greatly amazed, and sore troubled. And he saith unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful even unto death: abide ye here, and watch.
C And he went forward a little, and fell on the ground, and prayed, that, if it were possible, the hour might pass away from him. And he said, Abba, Father, all things are possible unto thee; remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done.

A And he came out, and went, as his custom was, unto the mount of Olives; and the disciples also followed him.
B And when he was at the place, he said unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation.
C And he was parted from them about a stone’s cast; and he kneeled down and prayed, saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done.

§ 140 AT THE PLACE NAMED GETHSEMANE

ERV margin:
1 Or and he that hath no sword, let him sell his cloak, and buy one
2 Greek end
3 Greek on enclosed piece of ground
4 Many ancient authorities omit verses 43 and 44

OT references: Lk 22:37 = Isaiah 53:12 Mt 26:38 and Mk 14:34 = Psalm 44:6

162
**Matt 26**

E And he cometh unto the disciples, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with me one hour? Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

F Again a second time he went away, and prayed, saying, O my Father, if this cannot pass away, except I drink it, thy will be done. And he came again and found them sleeping, for their eyes were heavy.

G And he left them again, and went away, and prayed a third time, saying again the same words. Then cometh he to the disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest; behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed unto the hands of sinners. Arise, let us be going: behold, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

**Mark 14**

E And he cometh, and findeth them sleeping, and saith unto Peter, Simon, sleepest thou? couldst thou not watch one hour? Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak.

F And again he went away, and prayed, saying the same words. And again he came, and found them sleeping, for their eyes were very heavy; and they wist not what to answer him.

G And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. Arise, let us be going: behold, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

**Luke 22**

E And when he rose up from his prayer, he came unto the disciples, and found them sleeping for sorrow, and said unto them, Why sleep ye? rise and pray, that ye enter not into temptation.

F And again he went away, and prayed, saying the same words. And again he came, and found them sleeping, for their eyes were very heavy; and they wist not what to answer him.

G And he cometh the third time, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners. Arise, let us be going: behold, he that betrayeth me is at hand.

§ 141 THE BETRAYAL AND ARREST OF JESUS

**Matt 26:47–56**

A And while he yet spake, lo, Judas, one of the twelve, came, and with him a great multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and elders of the people.

B Now he that betrayed him gave them a sign, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he: take him. And straightway he came to Jesus, and said, Hail, Rabbi; and kissed him. And Jesus said unto him, Friend, do that for which thou art come. Then they came and laid hands on Jesus, and took him.

**Mark 14:43–52**

A And straightway, while he yet spake, one of the twelve, and with him a multitude with swords and staves, from the chief priests and the scribes and the elders.

B Now he that betrayed him had given them a token, saying, Whomsoever I shall kiss, that is he; take him, and lead him away safely. And when he had come, straightway he came to him, and saith, Rabbi; and kissed him. And they laid hands on him, and took him.


A While he yet spake, behold, a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them;

B And he drew near unto Jesus to kiss him. But Jesus said unto him, Judas, betrayest thou the Son of man with a kiss?

C And when they that were about him saw what would follow, they said, Lord, shall we smite with the sword?

D But a certain one of them smote the servant of the high priest, and struck off his ear.

E But Jesus answered and said, Suffer ye thus far. And

ERV margin: 1 Or Watch ye, and pray that ye enter not 2 Greek kissed him much 3 Greek bondservant
Matt 26

F Then saith Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into its place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword. Or thinkest thou that I cannot beseech my Father, and he shall even now send me more than twelve legions of angels? How then should the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be?

G In that hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a robber with swords and staves to seize me? I sat daily in the temple teaching, and ye took me not.

H But all this come to pass, that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled.

I Then all the disciples left him, and fled.

Mark 14

G Jesus answered and said unto them, Are ye come out, as against a robber, with swords and staves to seize me? I was daily with you in the temple teaching, and ye took me not:

H but this is done that the scriptures might be fulfilled.

Luke 22

G And Jesus said unto the chief priests, and captains of the temple, and elders, which were come against him, Are ye come out, as against a robber, with swords and staves? When I was daily with you in the temple, ye stretched not forth your hands against me:

H but this is your hour, and the power of darkness.

J And a certain young man followed with him, having a linen cloth cast about him, over his naked body: and they lay hold on him; but he left the linen cloth, and fled naked.
CHAPTER XXIII

JUDICIAL TRIALS AND CRUCIFIXION OF JESUS

§ 142 THE TRIAL BEFORE THE JEWISH AUTHORITIES

Matt 26:57-75

A And they that had taken Jesus led him away to the house of Caiaphas the high priest, where the scribes and the elders were gathered together.

B But Peter followed him afar off, unto the court of the high priest, and entered in, and sat with the officers, to see the end.

C Now the chief priests and the whole council sought false witness against Jesus, that they might put him to death; and they found it not, though many false witnesses came. But afterward came two, and said, This man said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and to build it in three days.

Matt 26:59-61

D And the high priest stood up, and said unto him, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee? But Jesus held his peace.

E And the high priest said unto him, I adjure thee by the living God, that thou tell us whether thou be the Christ, the Son of God. Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: nevertheless I say unto you, Henceforth ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming on the clouds of heaven.

Mark 14:53-72

A And they led Jesus away to the high priest: and there came together with him all the chief priests and the elders and the scribes.

B Peter had followed him afar off, even within, into the court of the high priest; and he was sitting with the officers, and warming himself in the light of the fire.

C Now the chief priests and the whole council sought witness against Jesus to put him to death; and found it not. For many bare false witness against him, and their witness agreed not together. And there stood up certain, and bare false witness against him, saying, We heard him say, I will destroy this temple that is made with hands, and in three days I will build another made without hands. And not even so did their witness agree together.

D And the high priest stood up in the midst, and asked Jesus, saying, Answerest thou nothing? what is it which these witness against thee? But he held his peace, and answered nothing.

E Again the high priest asked him, and saith unto him, Art thou the Christ, the Son of the Blessed? And Jesus said, I am: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting at the right hand of power, and coming with the clouds of heaven.

Mark 14:73-74

F Then the high priest rent his garments, saying, He hath spoken blasphemy: what further need has a witness against him?

Luke 22:54-71

A And they seized him, and led him away, and brought him into the high priest's house.

B But Peter followed afar off. And when they had kindled a fire in the midst of the court, and had sat down together, Peter sat in the midst of them.

C Compare portion M below

D Compare portion N below

E Compare portion O below

F Compare portion P below

ERV margin: 1 Or sanctuary: as in Matt 23:35 and 27:5 2 Or sanctuary

OT references: Mt 26:64 and Mk 14:62 and Lk 22:69 = Psalm 110:1 and Daniel 7:13

165
MATT 26

Then did they spit in his face and buffet him: and some smote him with the palms of their hands, saying, Prophecy unto us, thou Christ: who is he that struck thee?

H Now Peter was sitting without in the court: and a maid came unto him, saying, Thou also wast with Jesus the Galilean. But he denied before them all, saying, I know not what thou sayest.

I And when he was gone out into the porch, another maid saw him, and said unto them that were there, This man also was with Jesus the Nazarene. And again he denied with an oath, I know not the man.

J And after a little while they that stood by came and said to Peter, Of a truth thou also art one of them; for thy speech bewrayeth thee. Then began he to curse and to swear, I know not the man.

K And straightway the cock crew. And Peter remembered the word which Jesus had said, Before the cock crow, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

MARK 14

And some began to spit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to say unto him, Prophecy: and the officers received him with blows of their hands.

H And as Peter was beneath in the court, there cometh one of the maidens of the high priest; and seeing Peter warming himself, she looked upon him, and saith, Thou also wast with the Nazarene, even Jesus. But he denied, saying, I know him not, nor understand what thou sayest: and he went out into the porch; and the cock crew. And the maid saw him, and began again to say to them that stood by, This is one of them. But he denied it.

I And after a little while another saw him, and said, Thou also art one of them. But Peter said, Man, I am not.

LUKE 22

And after these things space of about one hour another confidently affirmed, saying, Of a truth this man also was with him: for he is a Galilean. But Peter said, Man, I know not what thou sayest.

K And immediately, while he yet spake, the cock crew. And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how that he said unto him, Before the cock crow this day, thou shalt deny me thrice. And he went out, and wept bitterly.

L And the men that held Jesus mocked him, and beat him. And they blindfolded him, and asked him, saying, Prophecy: who is he that struck thee? And many other things spake they against him, reviling him.

M And as soon as it was day the assembly of the elders of the people was gathered together, both chief priests and

ERV margin: 1 Greek liable to what sayest thou? 2 Or with rods 3 Or strokes of rods 4 Or I neither know, nor understand: thou, 8 Greek him

OT references: Mt 26:65-66 and Mk 14:62-64 = Leviticus 22:25

166
§ 143 THE TRIAL BEFORE THE ROMAN AUTHORITIES

**Matt 27:1-31**

A Now when morning was come, all the chief priests and the elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death: and they bound him, and led him away, and delivered him up to Pilate the governor.

B Then Judas, which betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, saying, I have sinned in that I betrayed innocent blood. But they said, What is that to us? see thou to it. And he cast down the pieces of silver into the sanctuary, and departed; and he went away and hanged himself. And the chief priests took the pieces of silver, and said, It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, since it is the price of blood. And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. Wherefore that field was called, The field of blood, unto this day.

Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was priced, "whom certain of the children of Israel did price;"

**Mark 15:1-20**

A And straightway in the morning the chief priests with the elders and scribes, and the whole council, held a consultation, and bound Jesus, and carried him away, and delivered him up to Pilate.


A Compare §142 portion M

And the whole company of them rose up, and brought him before Pilate.

---

ERV margin: 1 Or Ye say it, because I am 3 Many ancient authorities read righteous 3 Greek corbanas, that is, sacred treasury: compare Mark 7:11 4 Or through 5 O: I took 6 Or whom they priced on the part of the Sons of Israel

and they gave them for the potter's field, as the Lord appointed me.

Now Jesus stood before the governor; and the governor asked him, saying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And Jesus said unto him, Thou sayest.

And when he was accused by the chief priests and elders, he answered nothing. Then saith Pilate unto him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee? And he gave him no answer, not even to one word: insomuch that the governor marvelled greatly.

And Pilate asked him, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he answering saith unto him, Thou sayest.

And the chief priests accused him of many things. And Pilate again asked him, saying, Answerest thou nothing? behold how many things they accuse thee of. But Jesus no more answered anything; insomuch that Pilate marvelled.

And Pilate said unto the chief priests and the multitudes, I find no fault in this man. But they were the more urgent, saying, He stirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Judea, and beginning from Galilee even unto this place. But when Pilate heard it, he asked whether the man were a Galilean. And when he knew that he was of Herod's jurisdiction, he sent him unto Herod, who himself also was at Jerusalem in these days.

Now when Herod saw Jesus, he was exceeding glad: for he was of a long time desirous to see him, because he had heard concerning him; and he hoped to see some miracle done by him. And he questioned him in many words; but he answered him nothing. And the chief priests and the scribes stood, vehemently accusing him. And Herod with his soldiers set him at nought, and mocked him, and arraying him in gorgeous apparel sent him back to Pilate. And Herod and Pilate became friends with each other that very day: for before they were at enmity between themselves.

And Pilate called together the chief priests and the rulers
MATT 27

1 Now at the feast the governor nor was wont to release unto the multitude one prisoner, whom they would. And they had been a notable prisoner, called Barabbas. When therefore they were gathered together, Pilate said unto them, Whom will ye that I release unto you? Barabbas, or Jesus which is called Christ? For he knew that for envy they had delivered him up.

MARK 15

1 Now at the feast he used to release unto them one prisoner, whom they asked of him. And there was one called Barabbas, lying bound with them that had made insurrection, men who in the insurrection had committed murder. And the multitude went up and began to ask him to do as he was wont to do unto them. And Pilate answered them, saying, Will ye that I release unto you the King of the Jews? For he perceived that for envy the chief priests had delivered him up.

LUKE 23

1 And I will therefore chastise him, and release him. But they cried out all together, saying, Away with this man, and release unto us Barabbas: one who for a certain insurrection made in the city, and for murder, was cast into prison.

JUDICIAL TRIALS AND CRUCIFIXION OF JESUS

§ 143

And while he was sitting on the judgement-seat, his wife sent unto him, saying, Have thou nothing to do with that righteous man: for I have suffered many things this day in a dream because of him.

And the chief priests and the elders persuaded the multitude that they should ask for Barabbas, and destroy Jesus. But the governor answered and said unto them, Whether of the twain will ye that I release unto you? And they said, Barabbas. Pilate saith unto them, What then shall I do unto Jesus which is called Christ? They all say, Let him be crucified. And he said, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out exceedingly, saying, Let him be crucified.

But the chief priests stirred up the multitude, that he should rather release Barabbas unto them. And Pilate again answered and said unto them, What then shall I do unto him whom ye call the King of the Jews? And they cried out again, Crucify him. And Pilate said unto them, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out exceedingly, saying, Crucify him.

And Pilate spake unto them again, desiring to release Jesus; but they shouted, saying, Crucify, crucify him. And he said unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath this man done? I have found no cause of death in him: I will therefore chastise him and release him. But they were instant with loud voices, asking that he might be crucified.

ERV margin:
1 Or a feast
2 Many ancient authorities insert verse 17: Now he must needs release unto them at the feast one prisoner; others add the same words after verse 19
3 Some ancient authorities read of this blood: see ye, etc.

OT references: Mt 27: 24 = Deuteronomy 21: 6–9

169
§ 143

RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

MATT 27
 hope of this righteous man: see ye to it. And all the people answered and said, His blood be on us, and on our children.

M Then released he unto 26 them Barabbas: but Jesus he scourged and delivered to be crucified.

MARK 15

And Pilate, 15 wishing to content the multitude, released unto them Barabbas, and delivered Jesus, when he had scourged him, to be crucified.

LUKE 23

And their voices prevailed. And Pilate gave sentence that what they asked for should be done. And he released him that for 25 insurrection and murder had been cast into prison, whom they asked for; but Jesus he delivered up to their will.

N Compare verse 11 of portion G above

N Then the soldiers of the governor took Jesus into the palace, and gathered unto him the whole band. And 28 they stripped him, and put on him a scarlet robe. And they 30 plaited a crown of thorns and put it upon his head, and a reed in his right hand; and they kneeled down before him, and mocked him, saying, Hail, King of the Jews! And they 30 spat upon him, and took the reed and smote him on the head. And when they had mocked him, they took off from him the robe, and put on him his garments, and led him away to crucify him.

§ 144

THE CRUCIFIXION OF JESUS

MATT 27:32–56

A And as they came out, 32 they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to go with them, that he might bear his cross.

MARK 15:21–41

A And they compelled one, 31 being by, Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to go with them, that he might bear his cross.

LUKE 23:26–49

A And when they led him 26 away, they laid hold upon one Simon of Cyrene, coming from the country, and laid on him the cross, to bear it after Jesus.

B And there followed him a great multitude of the people, and of women who bewailed and lamented him. But Je 28 sus turning unto them said, Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children. For behold, the days are coming, in which they shall say, Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the breasts that never gave suck. Then shall they begin to say to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us. For if they do these things in the dry?
Matt 27

C And when they were come33 unto a place called Golgotha, that is to say, The place of a skull, they gave him wine to drink mingled with gall: and when he had tasted it, he would not drink. And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments among them, casting lots: and they36 sat and watched him there. And they set up over his head37 his accusation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS. Then are there38 crucified with him two robbers, one on the right hand, and one on the left.

D And they39 that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Thou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself: if thou art the Son of God, come down from the cross. In like manner also the chief priests mocking him, with the scribes and elders, said, He saved others; but himself he cannot save. He is the King of Israel; let him now come down from the cross, and we will believe on him. He trusted in God; let him deliver him now, if he desireth him: for he said, I am the Son of God.

E And the robbers44 also that were crucified with him cast upon him the same reproach.

Mark 15

C And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The place of a skull. And they offered him wine mingled with myrrh: but he received it not. And they crucify him, and part his garments among them, casting lots upon them, what each should take. And it was the third hour, and they crucified him. And the superscription of his accusation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS. And with him they crucify two robbers; one on his right hand, and one on his left.3

D And they that passed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and saying, Halou that destroyest the temple, and buildest it in three days, save thyself, and come down from the cross. In like manner also the chief priests mocking him among themselves with the scribes said, He saved others; but himself he cannot save. Let the Christ, the King of Israel, now come down from the cross, that we may see and believe.

E And they that were crucified with him reproached him.

Luke 23

C And there were also two others, malefactors, led with him to be put to death.

D And when they came unto the place which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors, one on the right hand and the other on the left.4 And Jesus said, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And parting his garments among them, they cast lots.

Compare verse 38 of portion D below

D And the people stood beholding. And the rulers also scoffed at him, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if this is the Christ of God, his chosen. And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, offering him vinegar, and saying, If thou art the King of the Jews, save thyself. And there was also a superscription over him, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.
Matthew 27

Now from the sixth hour, there was darkness over all the land until the ninth hour.

And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? And some of them that stood there, when they heard it, said, This man calleth Elijah. And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink. And the rest said, Let be; let us see whether Elijah cometh to save him.

And Jesus cried again with a loud voice, and yielded up his spirit. And behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake; and the rocks were rent; and the tombs were opened; and many bodies of the saints that had fallen asleep were raised; and coming forth out of the tombs after his resurrection they entered into the holy city and appeared unto many.

And when the centurion, who stood by over against him, saw that he died, he glorified God, saying, Truly this was the Son of God.

And all the multitudes that came together to this sight, when they beheld the things that were done, returned smiting their breasts.

Mark 15

And when the sixth hour was come, there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour.

And at the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? And some of them that stood by, when they heard it, said, Behold, he calleth Elijah. And one ran, and filling a sponge full of vinegar, put it on a reed, and gave him to drink. And the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom.

Luke 23

And it was now about the sixth hour, and a darkness came over the whole land until the ninth hour; the sun’s light failing:

Compare verse 36 of portion D above.

And the veil of the temple was rent in the midst. And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father, into thy hands I commend my spirit; and having said this, he gave up the ghost.

And all his acquaintance smote their breasts.
MARK 15
many other women which came up with him unto Jerusalem.

§ 145 THE BURIAL OF JESUS

A And when even was come,57
B there came a rich man from Arimathea, named Joseph, who also himself was Jesus' disciple: this man went to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.
C Then Pilate commanded it to be given up.
D And Joseph took the body,59 and wrapped it in a clean linen cloth, and laid it in his own new tomb, which he had hewn out in the rock: and he rolled a great stone to the door of the tomb, and departed.
E Compare portion A above
F And Mary Magdalene was there, and the other Mary, sitting over against the sepulchre.

MARK 15:42—47
A And when even was now42 come, because it was the Preparation, that is, the day before the sabbath,
B there came Joseph of Arimathea, a counsellor of honourable estate, who also himself was looking for the kingdom of God; and he boldly went in unto Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.
C And Pilate marvelled if he were already dead: and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead. And when he learned it of the centurion, he granted the corpse to Joseph.
D And he bought a linen cloth, and taking him down, wound him in the linen cloth, and laid him in a tomb which had been hewn out of a rock; and he rolled a stone against the door of the tomb.
E Compare portion A above
F And Mary Magdalene and Mary the mother of Joses beheld where he was laid.

LUKE 23:50—55
A Compare portion E below
B And behold, a man named Joseph, who was a counsellor, a good man and a righteous (he had not consented to their counsel and deed), a man of Arimathea, a city of the Jews, who was looking for the kingdom of God: this man went to Pilate, and asked for the body of Jesus.
C And Pilate marvelled, and calling unto him the centurion, he asked him whether he had been any while dead. And when he learned it of the centurion, he granted the corpse to Joseph.
D And he bought a linen cloth, and taking him down, wound him in the linen cloth, and laid him in a tomb that was hewn in stone, where never man had yet lain.
E And it was the day of the Preparation, and the sabbath drew on.
F And the women, which had come with him out of Galilee, followed after, and beheld the tomb, and how his body was laid.
CHAPTER XXIV
EVENTS SUBSEQUENT TO THE DEATH OF JESUS

§ 146 THE GUARD FOR THE SEPULCHRE

MATTHEW 27:52–66

Now on the morrow, which is the day after the Preparation, the chief priests and the Pharisees were gathered together unto Pilate, saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I rise again. Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest haply his disciples come and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is risen from the dead: and the last error will be worse than the first. Pilate said unto them, Ye have a guard: go your way, make it as sure as ye can. So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, the guard being with them.

§ 147 THE VISIT TO THE SEPULCHRE

MATTHEW 28:1–10

MARK 16:1–8

A And when the sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, bought spices, that they might come and anoint him.

B And very early on the first day of the week, they come to the tomb when the sun was risen.

C And they were saying among themselves, Who shall roll us away the stone from the door of the tomb? and looking up, they see that the stone is rolled back: for it was exceeding great.

D And entering into the tomb, they saw a young man sitting on the right side, arrayed in a white robe; and they were amazed. And he saith unto them, Be not amazed: ye seek Jesus, the Nazarene, which hath been crucified: he is risen; he is not here: behold, the place where they laid him!

LUKE 23:56–24:12

A And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments. And on the sabbath they rested according to the commandment.

B But on the first day of the week, at early dawn, they came unto the tomb, bringing the spices which they had prepared.

C And they found the stone rolled away from the tomb. And they entered in, and found not the body of the Lord Jesus.

D And it came to pass, while they were perplexed thereabout, behold, two men stood by them in dazzling apparel: and as they were affrighted, and bowed down their faces to the earth, they said unto them, Why seek ye the living among the dead? He is not here, but is risen.
even as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

But go, 7 tell his disciples and Peter, He goeth before you into Galilee: there shall ye see him, as he said unto you.

And they went out, and fled from the tomb; for trembling and astonishment had come upon them: and they said nothing to any one; for they were afraid.*

And behold, 9 Jesus met them, saying, All hail. And they came and took hold of his feet, and worshipped him. Then saith 10 Jesus unto them, Fear not: go tell my brethren that they depart into Galilee, and there shall they see me.

Now they were Mary Magdalene, and Joanna, and Mary the mother of James: and the other women with them told these things unto the apostles. And these words appeared in their sight as idle talk; and they disbelieved them.

Peter arose, and ran unto the tomb; and stooping and looking in, he seeth the linen cloths by themselves; and he departed to his home, wondering at that which was come to pass.

§ 148 THE GUARD AND THE AUTHORITIES

Matt 28:11–15

Now while they were going, behold, some of the guard came into the city, and told unto the chief priests all the things that were come to pass. And when they were assembled with the elders, and had taken counsel, they gave

ERV margin: 1 Many ancient authorities read where he lay 2 Some ancient authorities omit from the tomb 3 Some ancient authorities omit verse 12 4 Or departed, wondering with himself 5 Greek demons

* About the ending of the record of Mark, both ERV and ARV have the marginal statement: The two oldest Greek manuscripts, and some other authorities, omit from verse 9 to the end. Some other authorities have a different ending to the Gospel. From 16:9 to the end is therefore not placed in full parallelism, but is set forth in footnote form:

H 9 Now when he was risen early on the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, from whom he had cast out seven devils.

I 10 She went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept. 11 And they, when they heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, disbelieved. (Mark 16:9–11)
MATT 28
large money unto the soldiers, saying, Say ye, 13 His disciples came by night, and stole him away while we slept. And if this 14 come to the governor's ears, we will persuade him, and rid you of care. So they took the money, and did 15 as they were taught: and this saying was spread abroad among the Jews, and continueth until this day.

§ 149 WITH THE DISCIPLES IN THE COUNTRY

LUKE 24:13-32
A  And behold, two of them were going that 13 very day to a village named Emmaus, which was three score furlongs from Jerusalem. And 14 they communed with each other of all these things which had happened. And it came to 15 pass, while they communed and questioned to- gether, that Jesus himself drew near, and went with them. But their eyes were holden that they 16 should not know him.
B  And he said unto them, 17 What communications are these that ye have one with another, as ye walk? And they stood still, looking sad. And one of them, named 18 Cleopas, answering said unto him, Dost thou alone sojourn in Jerusalem and not know the things which are come to pass there in these days? And he said unto them, What things? 19 And they said unto him, The things concern- ing Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet mighty in deed and word before God and all the people: and how the chief priests and our rulers 20 delivered him up to be condemned to death, and crucified him. But we hoped that it was 21 he which should redeem Israel.
C  Yea and be- side all this, it is now the third day since these things came to pass. Moreover certain women 22 of our company amazed us, having been early at the tomb; and when they found not his body, 23 they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.
D  And certain of them that were with us went 24 to the tomb, and found it even so as the women had said: but him they saw not.
E  And he said 25 unto them, O foolish men, and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken! Behaved it not the Christ to suffer these things, 26 and to enter into his glory? And beginning 27 from Moses and from all the prophets, he inter- preted to them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself.
F  And they drew nigh unto 28 the village, whither they were going: and he made as though he would go further. And 29 they constrained him, saying, Abide with us: for it is toward evening, and the day is now far spent. And he went in to abide with them. And it came to pass, when he had sat down 30 with them to meat, he took the bread, and

ERV margin:  1 Or come to a hearing before the governor  2 Greek What words are these that ye exchange one with another  3 Or Dost thou sojourn alone in Jerusalem, and knowest thou not the things  4 Or after  5 Or loaves

A  12 And after these things he was manifested in another form unto two of them, as they walked, on their way into the country. (Mark 16:12)
Luke 24
blessed it, and brake, and gave to them. And their eyes were opened, and they knew him; and he vanished out of their sight. And they said one to another, Was not our heart burning within us, while he spake to us in the way, while he opened to us the scriptures?

§ 150 WITH THE DISCIPLES IN JERUSALEM

Matt 28:19-20

A And they rose up that very hour, and returned to Jerusalem, and found the eleven gathered together, and them that were with them, saying, The Lord is risen indeed, and hath appeared to Simon. And they rehearsed the things that happened in the way, and how he was known of them in the breaking of the bread.

B And as they spake these things, he himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. But they were terrified and affrighted, and supposed that they beheld a spirit. And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and wherefore do reasonings arise in your heart? See my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye behold me having. And when he had said this, he showed them his hands and his feet.

C And while they still disbelieved for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here anything to eat? And they gave him a piece of broiled fish.

D And he took it, and did eat before them.

E And he said unto them, These are my words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, how that all things must be fulfilled, which are written in the law of Moses, and the prophets, and the psalms, concerning me. Then opened he their minds, that they might understand the scriptures; and he said unto them, Thus it is written, that the Christ should suffer, and rise again from the dead the third day; and that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name unto all the nations, beginning from Jerusalem. Ye are witnesses of these things. And behold, I send forth the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city, until ye be clothed with power from on high.

ERV margin: Some ancient authorities omit and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. Some ancient authorities omit verse 40. Many ancient authorities add and a honeycomb. Some ancient authorities read unto. Or nations. Beginning from Jerusalem, ye are witnesses. Greek all the days. Or the consummation of the age. Greek demons. Some ancient authorities omit new.

OT references: Lk 24:46 = Hosea 6:2

A 13 And they went away and told it unto the rest: neither believed they them.

B 14 And afterward he was manifested unto the eleven themselves as they sat at meat; and he upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

E 15 And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to the whole creation. 16 He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that disbelieveth shall be condemned. 17 And these signs shall follow them that believe: in my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; they shall take up serpents, and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall in no wise hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. (Mark 16:13-18)
Luke 24

And he led them out until they were over against Bethany: and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he parted from them, and was carried up into heaven. And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy; and were continually in the temple, blessing God.

§ 151 WITH THE DISCIPLES IN GALILEE

Matt 28:16-20

A But the eleven disciples went into Galilee, unto the mountain where Jesus had appointed them. And when they saw him, they worshipped him: but some doubted.

B And Jesus came to them and spake unto them, saying, All authority hath been given unto me in heaven and on earth.

C Go ye therefore, and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Ghost: teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I commanded you: and lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world.

Luke 24:47-49

C And that repentance and remission of sins should be preached in his name unto all the nations, beginning from Jerusalem. Ye are witnesses of these things. And behold, I send forth the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city, until ye be clothed with power from on high. (§150 E)

ERV margin: 1 Some ancient authorities omit and was carried up into heaven 2 Some ancient authorities omit worshipped him, and 3 Greek all the days 4 Or the consummation of the age 5 Some ancient authorities read unto 6 Or nations. Beginning from Jerusalem, ye are witnesses

OT references: Mk 16:19 = Psalm 110:1

f 19 So then the Lord Jesus, after he had spoken unto them, was received up into heaven, and sat down at the right hand of God. 20 And they went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word by the signs that followed. Amen. (Mark 16:19-20)

n All things have been delivered unto me of my Father. (§41 Q=Mk 11:27)

b All things have been delivered unto me of my Father. (§52 T=Lk 10:32)

c Compare the reference attached to §150 portion x

179
BOOK II

THE RECORD OF JOHN
RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

BOOK II

THE RECORD OF JOHN

CHAPTER I  PROLOGUE TO THE RECORD OF JOHN
CHAPTER II  IN BETHANY BEYOND JORDAN
CHAPTER III  IN THE PROVINCE OF GALILEE
CHAPTER IV  IN JERUSALEM AT THE PASSOVER
CHAPTER V  IN THE LAND OF JUDEA
CHAPTER VI  IN THE PROVINCE OF SAMARIA
CHAPTER VII  IN THE PROVINCE OF GALILEE
CHAPTER VIII  IN JERUSALEM AT A FEAST
CHAPTER IX  ABOUT THE SEA OF GALILEE
CHAPTER X  AT THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES
CHAPTER XI  AT THE FEAST OF THE DEDICATION
CHAPTER XII  IN THE REGION OF JERUSALEM
CHAPTER XIII  CHALLENGE TO THE JERUSALEM LEADERS
CHAPTER XIV  FINAL HOURS WITH DISCIPLES
CHAPTER XV  JUDICIAL TRIALS AND CRUCIFIXION
CHAPTER XVI  SUBSEQUENT TO THE DEATH OF JESUS
CHAPTER I

PROLOGUE TO THE RECORD OF JOHN

§ 152 PROLOGUE TO THE RECORD OF JOHN

A 1 In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. 2 The same was in the beginning with God. 3 All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that hath been made. 4 In him was life, and the life was the light of men. 5 And the light shineth in the darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

B 6 There came a man, sent from God, whose name was John. 7 The same came for witness, that he might bear witness of the light, that all might believe through him. 8 He was not the light, but came that he might bear witness of the light. 9 There was the true light, even the light which lighteth every man, coming into the world.

C 10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not. 11 He came unto his own, and they that were his own received him not. 12 But as many as received him, to them gave he the right to become children of God, even to them that believe on his name: 13 which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

D 14 And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld his glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father), full of grace and truth.

E 15 John beareth witness of him, and crieth, saying, 'This was he of whom I said, He that cometh after me is become before me: for he was before me.'

F 16 For of his fulness we all received, and grace for grace. 17 For the law was given by Moses; grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. 18 No man hath seen God at any time; 19 the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.

ERV margin: 1 Or through 2 Or was not anything made. That which hath been made was life in him; and the life, etc. 3 Or overcome: see John 12:35 (Greek) 4 Or The true light, which lighteth every man, was coming 5 Or every man as he cometh 6 Greek his own things 7 Or begotten 8 Greek bloods 9 Greek tabernacled 10 Or on only begotten from a father: 11 Some ancient authorities read (this was he that said) 12 Greek first in regard of me 13 Many very ancient authorities read God only begotten

E Compare §154 portion A

183
CHAPTER II
IN BETHANY BEYOND JORDAN

§ 153 PURPOSE OF THE PREACHING OF JOHN

John 1:19-28

A 19 And this is the witness of John, when the Jews sent unto him from Jerusalem priests and Levites to ask him, Who art thou? 20 And he confessed, and denied not; and he confessed, I am not the Christ.

B 21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elijah? And he saith, I am not. Art thou the prophet? And he answered, No. 22 They said therefore unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?

C 23 He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said Isaiah the prophet.

D 24 And they had been sent from the Pharisees. 25 And they asked him, and said unto him, Why then baptizest thou, if thou art not the Christ, neither Elijah, neither the prophet?

E 26 John answered them, saying, I baptize with water: in the midst of you standeth one whom ye know not, 27 even he that cometh after me, the latchet of whose shoe I am not worthy to unloose.

F 28 These things were done in Bethany beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

§ 154 PURPOSE OF THE BAPTISM BY JOHN

John 1:29-34

A 29 On the morrow he seeth Jesus coming unto him, and saith, Behold, the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world! 30 This is he of whom I said, After me cometh a man which is become before me: for he was before me.

B 31 And I knew him not; but that he should be made manifest to Israel, for this cause came I baptizing with water.

C 32 And John bare witness, saying, I have beheld the Spirit descending as a dove out of heaven; and it abode upon him.

D 33 And I knew him not: but he that sent me to baptize with water, he said unto me, Upon whomsoever thou shalt see the Spirit descending, and abiding upon him, the same is he that baptizeth with the Holy Spirit. 34 And I have seen, and have borne witness that this is the Son of God.

ERV margin: 1 Or And certain had been sent from among the Pharisees 2 Or in 3 Many ancient authorities read Bethabara, some Bethabarah 4 Or beareth the sin 5 Greek first in regard of me

OT references: John 1:23 = Isaiah 40:3

A Compare §17 portion E
 § 155 TRANSITION OF DISCIPLES FROM JOHN TO JESUS

MT-MK-LK
A For the Mt-Mk-Lk record of the relation of Andrew and Simon Peter to Jesus, compare §§23 and §27

B In connection with the double name of Simon Peter, compare §§35C, §56D, and §71E

§ 156 JESUS WINS EARLY FOLLOWERS

JOHN 1:35-42

A 35 Again on the morrow John was standing, and two of his disciples; 36 and he looked upon Jesus as he walked, and saith, Behold, the Lamb of God! 37 And the two disciples heard him speak, and they followed Jesus. 38 And Jesus turned, and beheld them following, and saith unto them, Woeful ye? And they said unto him, Rabbi (which is to say, being interpreted, Master), where abidest thou? 39 He saith unto them, Come, and ye shall see. They came therefore and saw where he abode; and they abode with him that day: it was about the tenth hour. 40 One of the two that heard John speak, and followed him, was Andrew, Simon Peter’s brother. 41 He findeth first his own brother Simon, and saith unto him, We have found the Messiah (which is, being interpreted, Christ). 42 He brought him unto Jesus.

B Jesus looked upon him, and said, Thou art Simon the son of John: thou shalt be called Cephas (which is by interpretation, Peter).

JOHN 1:43-51

A 43 On the morrow he was minded to go forth into Galilee, and he findeth Philip: and Jesus saith unto him, Follow me. 44 Now Philip was from Bethsaida, of the city of Andrew and Peter. 45 Philip findeth Nathanael, and saith unto him, We have found him, of whom Moses in the law, and the prophets, did write, Jesus of Nazareth, the son of Joseph. 46 And Nathanael said unto him, Can any good thing come out of Nazareth? Philip saith unto him, Come and see. 47 Jesus saw Nathanael coming to him, and saith of him, Behold, an Israelite indeed, in whom is no guile! 48 Nathanael saith unto him, Whence knowest thou me? Jesus answered and said unto him, Before Philip called thee, when thou wast under the fig tree, I saw thee. 49 Nathanael answered him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art King of Israel. 50 Jesus answered and said unto him, Because I said unto thee, I saw thee underneath the fig tree, believest thou? thou shalt see greater things than these.

B 51 And he saith unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye shall see the heaven opened, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man.

ERV margin: 1 Or Teacher 2 That is Anointed 3 Greek Ioannes: called in Matthew 16:17, Joseph
4 That is Rock or Stone

OT references: John 1:51 = Genesis 28:12
CHAPTER III
IN THE PROVINCE OF GALILEE

§ 157 IN CANA OF GALILEE

JOHN 2:1-11

A 1 And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: 2 and Jesus also was bidden, and his disciples, to the marriage. 3 And when the wine failed, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. 4 And Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come. 5 His mother saith unto the servants, Whosoever he saith unto you, do it.

B 6 Now there were six waterpots of stone set there after the Jews’ manner of purifying, containing two or three firkins apiece. 7 Jesus saith unto them, Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them up to the brim. 8 And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the ruler of the feast. And they bare it. 9 And when the ruler of the feast tasted the water now become wine, and knew not whence it was (but the servants which had drawn the water knew), the ruler of the feast calleth the bridegroom, 10 and saith unto him, Every man setteth on first the good wine; and when men have drunk freely, then that which is worse: thou hast kept the good wine until now.

C c 11 This beginning of his signs did Jesus in Cana of Galilee, and manifested his glory; and his disciples believed on him.

§ 158 AT CAPERNAUM IN GALILEE

JOHN 2:12

12 After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his disciples: and there they abode not many days.

ERV margin: 1 Or steward 2 Or that it had become

C Compare §173 portion c
CHAPTER IV
IN JERUSALEM AT THE PASSOVER

§ 159 JESUS CASTS COMMERCE FROM THE TEMPLE

John 2:13-22

A 13 And the passover of the Jews was at hand, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

B 14 And he found in the temple those that sold oxen and sheep and doves, and the changers of money sitting:
C 15 and he made a scourge of cords, and cast all out of the temple, both the sheep and the oxen; and he poured out the changers' money, and overthrew their tables;
D 16 and to them that sold the doves he said, Take these things hence; make not my Father's house a house of merchandise.
E 17 His disciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine house shall eat me up.
F 18 The Jews therefore answered and said unto him, What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things?
G 19 Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.
H 20 The Jews therefore said, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou raise it up in three days? 21 But he spake of the temple of his body.
I 22 When therefore he was raised from the dead, his disciples remembered that he spake this; and they believed the scripture, and the word which Jesus had said.

Mt-Mk-Lk
A Compare §137 portion A
B Compare §126 portion A
C Compare §126 portion C
D Compare §128 portion A
E Compare §142 portion C
F Compare §144 portion D

§ 160 ATTITUDE IN JERUSALEM TOWARD JESUS

John 2:23-25

23 Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, during the feast, many believed on his name, beholding his signs which he did. 24 But Jesus did not trust himself unto them, for that he knew all men, 25 and because he needed not that any one should bear witness concerning him; for he himself knew what was in man.

§ 161 DISCOURSE WITH A JEWISH TEACHER

John 3:1-12

A 1 Now there was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: 2 the same came unto him by night, and said to him,
B 3 Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born anew, he cannot see the kingdom of God.
C 4 Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter a second time into his mother's

ERV margin: 1 Or sanctuary 2 Or a man; for . . . the man 3 Or from above

OT references: John 2:17 = Psalm 69:9

A For other references to Nicodemus, compare §189 H and §218 E

189
Mt-Mk-Lk

John 3

womb, and be born? 5 Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

6 That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. 7 Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born anew. 8 The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the voice thereof, but knowest not whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus answered and said unto him, How can these things be? 10 Jesus answered and said unto him, Art thou the teacher of Israel, and understandest not these things?

11 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and bear witness of that we have seen; and ye receive not our witness. 12 If I told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you heavenly things?

§ 162 MISSION OF THE SON OF MAN AND SON OF GOD

John 3:13–21

A 13 And no man hath ascended into heaven, but he that descended out of heaven, even the Son of man, whom is in heaven.

14 And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up: 15 that whosoever believeth in him should have eternal life.

B 16 For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth on him should not perish, but have eternal life. 17 For God sent not the Son into the world to judge the world; but that the world should be saved through him.

18 He that believeth on him is not judged: he that believeth not hath been judged already, because he hath not believed on the name of the only begotten Son of God.

C 19 And this is the judgement, that the light is come into the world, and men loved the darkness rather than the light; for their works were evil. 20 For every one that doeth ill hateth the light, and cometh not to the light, lest his works should be reproved. 21 But he that doeth the truth cometh to the light, that his works may be made manifest, that they have been wrought in God.

ERV margin: 1 Or from above 2 Or The Spirit breatheth 3 Many ancient authorities omit which is in heaven 4 Or believeth in him may have 5 Or practiseth 6 Or convicted 7 Or becomes

a Compare §166 portion A
b Compare §166 portion c
CHAPTER V

IN THE LAND OF JUDÆA

§ 163 BAPTISM OF THE DISCIPLES OF JESUS

JOHN 3:22

22 After these things came Jesus and his disciples into the land of Judæa; and there he tarried with them, and baptized."

§ 164 BAPTISM OF DISCIPLES BY JOHN

JOHN 3:23-24

23 And John also was baptizing in Ænon near to Salim, because there was much water there: and they came, and were baptized. 24 For John was not yet cast into prison.

For the Mt-Mk-Lk account of the imprisonment of John, compare §17 R and §38 D

§ 165 RELATION OF JOHN TO JESUS

JOHN 3:25-30

A 25 There arose therefore a questioning on the part of John's disciples with a Jew about purifying. 26 And they came unto John, and said to him, Rabbi, he that was with thee beyond Jordan, to whom thou hast borne witness, behold, the same baptizeth, and all men come to him. 27 John answered and said, A man can receive nothing, except it have been given him from heaven.

B 28 Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but, that I am sent before him.

C 29 He that hath the bride is the bridegroom: but the friend of the bridegroom, which standeth and heareth him, rejoiceth greatly because of the bridegroom's voice: this my joy therefore is fulfilled. 30 He must increase, but I must decrease.

§ 166 RELATION OF TRUTH TO SOURCE

JOHN 3:31-36

A 31 He that cometh from above is above all: he that is of the earth is of the earth, and of the earth he speaketh: he that cometh from heaven is above all. 32 What he hath seen and heard, of that he beareth witness; and no man receiveth his witness. 33 He that hath received his witness hath set his seal to this, that God is true. 34 For he whom God hath sent speaketh the words of God: for he giveth not the Spirit by measure.

B 35 The Father loveth the Son, and hath given all things into his hand.

C 36 He that believeth on the Son hath eternal life; but he that believeth not the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abideth on him.

ERV margin: 2 Greek were many waters 3 Some ancient authorities read he that cometh from heaven beareth witness of what he hath seen and heard 3 Or believeth not

* Compare §167
B Compare §155

A Compare §165 portion c
C Compare §165 portion b

191
§ 167 DEPARTURE FROM JUDEA FOR GALILEE

Mt-Mx-Lk
Compare §21 portion A

John 4:1-3

1 When therefore the Lord knew how that the Pharisees had heard that Jesus was making and baptizing more disciples than John 2 (although Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples), 3 he left Judea, and departed again into Galilee.
CHAPTER VI

IN THE PROVINCE OF SAMARIA

§ 168 JESUS JOURNEYS TO SYCHAR OF SAMARIA

John 4:4-6

And he must needs pass through Samaria. 5 So he cometh to a city of Samaria, called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph: 6 and Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus by the well. It was about the sixth hour.

§ 169 DISCOURSE WITH A WOMAN OF SAMARIA

John 4:7-26

A 7 There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. 8 For his disciples were gone away into the city to buy food. 9 The Samaritan woman therefore saith unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a Samaritan woman? (For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans.)

B 10 Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. 11 The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water? 12 Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his sons, and his cattle?

C 13 Jesus answered and said unto her, Every one that drinketh of this water shall thirst again: 14 but whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall become in him a well of water springing up unto eternal life. 15 The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come all the way hither to draw.

D 16 Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. 17 The woman answered and said unto him, I have no husband. Jesus saith unto her, Thou saiest well, I have no husband: 18 for thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: this hast thou said truly.

E 19 The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. 20 Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. 21 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when neither in this mount, nor in Jerusalem, shall ye worship the Father. 22 Ye worship that which ye know not: we worship that which we know: for salvation is from the Jews. 23 But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and truth: for such doth the Father seek to be his worshippers. 24 God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship in spirit and truth.

F 25 The woman saith unto him, I know that Messiah cometh (which is called Christ): when he is come, he will declare unto us all things. 26 Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am he.

ERV margin: 1 Greek spring: and so in verse 14; but not in verses 11 and 12 2 Or as he was 3 Some ancient authorities omit For Jews have no dealings with Samaritans 4 Or Lord 5 Or for such the Father also seeketh 6 Or God is spirit
§ 170 DISCOURSE WITH THE DISCIPLES

Mt-Mk-Lk

A 27 And upon this came his disciples; and they marvelled that he was speaking with a woman; yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why speakest thou with her?
B 28 So the woman left her waterpot, and went away into the city, and saith to the men, 29 Come, see a man, which told me all things that ever I did: can this be the Christ? 30 They went out of the city, and were coming to him.
C 31 In the mean while the disciples prayed him, saying, Rabbi, eat. 32 But he said unto them, I have meat to eat that ye know not. 33 The disciples therefore said one to another, Hath any man brought him ought to eat? 34 Jesus saith unto them, My meat is to do the will of him that sent me, and to accomplish his work.
D 35 Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then cometh the harvest? behold, I say unto you, Lift up your eyes, and look on the fields, that they are white already unto harvest.
E 36 He that reapeth receiveth wages, and gathereth fruit unto life eternal; that he that soweth and he that reapeth may rejoice together. 37 For herein is the saying true, One soweth, and another reapeth. 38 I sent you to reap that whereon ye have not laboured: others have laboured, and ye are entered into their labour.

§ 171 STAY OF JESUS IN SAMARIA

John 4:39-42

39 And from that city many of the Samaritans believed on him because of the word of the woman, who testified, He told me all things that ever I did. 40 So when the Samaritans came unto him, they besought him to abide with them: and he abode there two days. 41 And many more believed because of his word; 42 and they said to the woman, Now we believe, not because of thy speaking: for we have heard for ourselves, and know that this is indeed the Saviour of the world.

ERV margin: 1 Or while unto harvest. Already he that reapeth etc.
CHAPTER VII

IN THE PROVINCE OF GALILEE

§ 172 ATTITUDE OF GALILÆANS TOWARD JESUS

JOHN 4:43-45
A 43 And after the two days he went forth from thence into
Galilee.
B 44 For Jesus himself testified, that a prophet hath no
honour in his own country.
C 45 So when he came into Galilee, the
Galilæans received him, having seen all the things that he did in
Jerusalem at the feast: for they also went unto the feast.

Mt-Mk-Lk
A Compare §21 portion A
B Compare §22 portion H
C Compare §54 portion H

§ 173 IN CANA OF GALILEE

JOHN 4:46-54
A 46 He came therefore again unto Cana of Galilee, where he
made the water wine.
B And there was a certain 'nobleman, whose
son was sick at Capernaum. 47 When he heard that Jesus was
come out of Judæa into Galilee, he went unto him, and besought
him that he would come down, and heal his son; for he was at
the point of death. 48 Jesus therefore said unto him, Except ye
see signs and wonders, ye will in no wise believe. 49 The 'noble-
man saith unto him, 'Sir, come down ere my child die. 50 Jesus
saith unto him, Go thy way; thy son liveth. The man believed
the word that Jesus spake unto him, and he went his way. 51 And
as he was now going down, his 'servants met him, saying, that his
son lived. 52 So he inquired of them the hour when he began to
amend. They said therefore unto him, Yesterday at the seventh
hour the fever left him. 53 So the father knew that it was at that
hour in which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth: and himself
believed, and his whole house.
C 54 This is again the second sign
that Jesus did, having come out of Judæa into Galilee.

ERV margin: 1 Or king's officer 2 Or Lord 3 Greek bondservants
A Compare §157 portions AB
C Compare §157 portion C

195
CHAPTER VIII

IN JERUSALEM AT A FEAST

§ 174 AT THE POOL OF BETHESDA

JOHN 5:1-9a

A 1 After these things there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.
B 2 Now there is in Jerusalem by the sheep gate a pool, which is called in Hebrew Bethsaida, having five porches. 3 In these lay a multitude of them that were sick, blind, halt, withered. 5 And a certain man was there, which had been thirty and eight years in his infirmity. 6 When Jesus saw him lying, and knew that he had been now a long time in that case, he saith unto him, Wouldest thou be made whole? 7 The sick man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool: but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.
C 8 Jesus saith unto him, Arise, take up thy bed, and walk. 9 And straightway the man was made whole, and took up his bed and walked.

§ 175 CRITICISM FOR ACTIVITY ON THE SABBATH

JOHN 5:9b-18

A 9 Now it was the sabbath on that day. 10 So the Jews said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath, and it is not lawful for thee to take up thy bed.
B 11 But he answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk. 12 They asked him, Who is the man that said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk? 13 But he that was healed wist not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in the place. 14 Afterward Jesus foundeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing befall thee. 15 The man went away, and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole.
C 16 And for this cause did the Jews persecute Jesus, because he did these things on the sabbath. 17 But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh even until now, and I work. 18 For this cause therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only brake the sabbath, but also called God his own Father, making himself equal with God.

§ 176 DISCOURSE ON JUDGMENT AND LIFE

JOHN 5:19-20

A 19 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them,
Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father doing: for what things soever he doeth, these the Son also doeth in like manner. 20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth:

ERV margin: 1 Many ancient authorities read the feast 2 Some ancient authorities read Bethsada others Bethsaida 3 Many ancient authorities insert, wholly or in part, waiting for the moving of the water: a for an angel of the Lord went down at certain seasons into the pool, and troubled the water: whenever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in was made whole, with whatsoever disease he was holden 4 Or Lord

OT references: John 5:10 = Exodus 20:10 and Deuteronomy 5:14

Compare §§88 portion b and §195 portion b
Mt-Mk-Lk

John 5

B and greater works than these will he shew him, that ye may marvel. 21 For as the Father raiseth the dead and quickeneth them, even so the Son also quickeneth whom he will. 22 For neither doth the Father judge any man, but he hath given all judgement unto the Son; 23 that all may honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which sent him. 24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth him that sent me, hath eternal life, and cometh not into judgement, but hath passed out of death into life.

C 25 Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour cometh, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God; and they that hear shall live. 26 For as the Father hath life in himself, even so gave he to the Son also to have life in himself: 27 and he gave him authority to execute judgement, because he is 'the Son of man.

D 28 Marvel not at this: for the hour cometh, in which all that are in the tombs shall hear his voice, and shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done ill, unto the resurrection of judgement.

§ 177 WITNESSES TO THE TRUTH OF JESUS

John 5:30-47

A 30 I can of myself do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is righteous; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. 31 If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. 32 There is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnessed of me is true.

B 33 Ye have sent unto John, and he hath borne witness unto the truth. 34 But the witness which I receive is not from man: howbeit I say these things, that ye may be saved. 35 He was the lamp that burneth and shineth: and ye were willing to rejoice for a season in his light.

C 36 But the witness which I have is greater than that of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to accomplish, the very works that I do, bear witness of me, that the Father hath sent me.

D 37 And the Father which sent me, he hath borne witness of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his form. 38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he sent, him ye believe not.

E 39 Ye search the scriptures, because ye think that in them ye have eternal life; and these are they which bear witness of me; 40 and ye will not come to me, that ye may have life.

F 41 I receive not glory from men. 42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in yourselves. 43 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. 44 How can ye believe, which receive glory one of another, and the glory that cometh from the only God ye seek not?

G 45 Think not that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, on whom ye have set your hope. 46 For if ye believed Moses, ye would believe me; for he wrote of me. 47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?
CHAPTER IX
ABOUT THE SEA OF GALILEE

§ 178 TEACHING AND FEEDING THE MULTITUDE

JOHN 6:1–13

A 1 After these things Jesus went away to the other side of the sea of Galilee, which is the sea of Tiberias. 2 And a great multitude followed him, because they beheld the signs which he did on them that were sick.

B 3 And Jesus went up into the mountain, and there he sat with his disciples. 4 Now the passover, the feast of the Jews, was at hand. 5 Jesus therefore lifting up his eyes, and seeing that a great multitude cometh unto him,

C saith unto Philip, Whence are we to buy bread, that these may eat? 6 And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.

D 7 Philip answered him, Two hundred *pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one may take a little. 8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him, 9 There is a lad here, which hath five barley loaves, and two fishes: but what are these among so many?

E 10 Jesus said, Make the people sit down. Now there was much grass in the place.

F So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.

G therefore took the loaves; and having given thanks, he distributed to them that were set down; likewise also of the fishes as much as they would.

H 12 And when they were filled, he saith unto his disciples, Gather up the broken pieces which remain over, that nothing be lost. 13 So they gathered them up, and filled twelve baskets with broken pieces from the five barley loaves, which remained over unto them that had eaten.

§ 179 POPULAR ATTITUDE TOWARD JESUS

JOHN 6:14–15

A 14 When therefore the people saw the sign which he did, they said, This is of a truth the prophet that cometh into the world.

B 15 Jesus therefore perceiving that they were about to come and take him by force, to make him king, withdrew again into the mountain himself alone.

§ 180 ACROSS THE SEA OF GALILEE

JOHN 6:16–21

A 16 And when evening came, his disciples went down unto the sea; 17 and they entered into a boat, and were going over the sea unto Capernaum.

B And it was now dark, and Jesus had not yet come to them. 18 And the sea was rising by reason of a great wind that blew. 19 When therefore they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they behold Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the boat:

ERV margin: 1 Greek loaves 2 The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence halfpenny 3 Some ancient authorities read signs
§ 180
RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

Mt-Mk-Lk

C Compare §61 portion B
D Compare §61 portion D

John 6

C and they were afraid.
D 20 But he saith unto them, It is I; be not afraid.
D 21 They were willing therefore to receive him into the boat: and straightway the boat was at the land whither they were going.

§ 181
THE MULTITUDE IN CAPERNAUM

John 6:22–26

22 On the morrow the multitude which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was none other boat there, save one, and that Jesus entered not with his disciples into the boat, but that his disciples went away alone 23 (howbeit there came boats from Tiberias nigh unto the place where they ate the bread after the Lord had given thanks): 24 when the multitude therefore saw that Jesus was not there, neither his disciples, they themselves got into the boats, and came to Capernaum, seeking Jesus. 25 And when they found him on the other side of the sea, they said unto him, Rabbi, when camest thou hither? 26 Jesus answered them and said, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Ye seek me, not because ye saw signs, but because ye ate of the loaves, and were filled.

§ 182
DISCOURSE ON THE BREAD OF LIFE

John 6:27–59

A 27 Work not for the meat which perisheth, but for the meat which abideth unto eternal life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him the Father, even God, hath sealed. 28 They said therefore unto him, What must we do, that we may work the works of God? 29 Jesus answered and said unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath sent.
B 30 They said therefore unto him, What then doest thou for a sign, that we may see, and believe thee? what workest thou? 31 Our fathers ate the manna in the wilderness; as it is written, He gave them bread out of heaven to eat.
C 32 Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, It was not Moses that gave you the bread out of heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread out of heaven. 33 For the bread of God is that which cometh down out of heaven, and giveth life unto the world. 34 They said therefore unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread. 35 Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall not hunger, and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.
D 36 But I said unto you, that ye have seen me, and yet believe not.
E 37 All that the Father giveth me shall come unto me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out. 38 For I am come down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. 39 And this is the will of him that sent me, that of all that which he hath given me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up at the last day. 40 For this is the will of my Father, that every one that believeth the Son, and believeth on him, should have eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day.

F Compare §22 portion D

F 41 The Jews therefore murmured concerning him, because he said, I am the bread which came down out of heaven. 42 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? how doth he now say, I am come down out of heaven?

ERV margin: 1 Greek little boat 2 Greek little boats 3 Or he sent 4 Or that I should raise him up

OT references: John 6:32 = Exodus 16:4, 15 and Psalm 78:24 and Nehemiah 9:15

200
John 6

43 Jesus answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. 44 No man can come to me, except the Father which sent me draw him: and I will raise him up in the last day. 45 It is written in the prophets, And they shall all be taught of God. Every one that hath heard from the Father, and hath learned, cometh unto me.

H 46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is from God, he hath seen the Father.

I 47 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth hath eternal life. 48 I am the bread of life. 49 Your fathers did eat the manna in the wilderness, and they died. 50 This is the bread which cometh down out of heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die. 51 I am the living bread which came down out of heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he shall live for ever: yea and the bread which I will give is my flesh, for the life of the world.

J 52 The Jews therefore strove one with another, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat? 53 Jesus therefore said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man and drink his blood, ye have not life in yourselves. 54 He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. 55 For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. 56 He that eateth my flesh and drinketh my blood abideth in me, and I in him. 57 As the living Father sent me, and I live because of the Father; so he that eateth me, he also shall live because of me. 58 This is the bread which came down out of heaven: not as the fathers did eat, and died: he that eateth this bread shall live for ever.

K 59 These things said he in the synagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

§ 183 EFFECT OF THE DISCOURSE ON DISCIPLES

John 6:60-71

A 60 Many therefore of his disciples, when they heard this, said, This is a hard saying; who can hear it? 61 But Jesus knowing in himself that his disciples murmured at this, said unto them, Doth this cause you to stumble? 62 What then if ye should behold the Son of man ascending where he was before? 63 It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I have spoken unto you are spirit, and are life.

B 64 But there are some of you that believe not. For Jesus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who it was that should betray him. 65 And he said, For this cause have I said unto you, that no man can come unto me, except it be given unto him of the Father.

C 66 Upon this many of his disciples went back, and walked no more with him. 67 Jesus said therefore unto the twelve, Would ye also go away? 68 Simon Peter answered him, Lord, to whom shall we go? thou hast the words of eternal life. 69 And we have believed and know that thou art the Holy One of God.

D 70 Jesus answered them, Did not I choose you the twelve, and one of you is a devil? 71 Now he spake of Judas the son of Simon Iscariot, for he it was that should betray him, being one of the twelve.

§ 184 JESUS IN GALILEE

John 7:1

1 And after these things Jesus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Judaea, because the Jews sought to kill him.

ERV margin: 1 Greek true meat 2 Greek true drink 3 Or a synagogue 4 Or him 5 Or last words

OT references: John 6:45 = Isaiah 54:13

D Compare §209 portions C (verse 11) and P and N

201
CHAPTER X

AT THE FEAST OF TABERNACLES

§ 185 OPINIONS OF THE BRETHREN OF JESUS

JOHN 7:2-9

A 2 Now the feast of the Jews, the feast of tabernacles, was at hand. 3 His brethren therefore said unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy disciples also may behold thy works which thou doest. 4 For no man doeth anything in secret, but himself seeketh to be known openly. If thou doest these things, manifest thyself to the world.

B 5 For even his brethren did not believe on him.

C 6 Jesus therefore saith unto them, My time is not yet come; but your time is alway ready. 7 The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that its works are evil. 8 Go ye up unto the feast: I go not up yet unto this feast; because my time is not yet fulfilled. 9 And having said these things unto them, he abode still in Galilee.

§ 186 POPULAR OPINIONS ABOUT JESUS

JOHN 7:10-13

10 But when his brethren were gone up unto the feast, then went he also up, not publicly, but as it were in secret. 11 The Jews therefore sought him at the feast, and said, Where is he? 12 And there was much murmuring among the multitudes concerning him: some said, He is a good man; others said, Not so, but he leadeth the multitude astray. 13 Howbeit no man spake openly of him for fear of the Jews.

§ 187 SOURCE OF THE TEACHING OF JESUS

JOHN 7:14-18

A 14 But when it was now the midst of the feast Jesus went up into the temple, and taught. 15 The Jews therefore marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? 16 Jesus therefore answered them, and said, My teaching is not mine, but his that sent me. 17 If any man will he to do his will, he shall know of the teaching, whether it be of God, or whether I speak from myself. 18 He that speaketh from himself seeketh his own glory: but he that seeketh the glory of him that sent him, the same is true, and no unrighteousness is in him.

§ 188 CONCERNING HEALING ON THE SABBATH

JOHN 7:19-24

A 19 Did not Moses give you the law, and yet none of you doeth the law? Why seek ye to kill me? 20 The multitude answered, Thou hast a devil: who seeketh to kill thee? 21 Jesus answered and said unto them, I did one work, and ye all marvel. 22 For

ERV margin: 1 Some ancient authorities read and seeketh it to be known openly. 2 Many ancient authorities omit yet. 3 Greek demon. 4 Or marvelled because of this. Moses hath given you circumcision.

OT references: John 7:22-23 = Genesis 17:9-14 and Leviticus 12:1-3

b Compare §175 portion c and §195 portion b

203
this cause hath Moses given you circumcision (not that it is of Moses, but of the fathers); and on the sabbath ye circumcise a man. 23 If a man receiveth circumcision on the sabbath, that the law of Moses may not be broken; are ye wroth with me, because I made a man every whit whole on the sabbath? 24 Judge not according to appearance, but judge righteous judgement.

§ 189 CONFLICTING JUDGMENTS ABOUT JESUS

JOHN 7:25-52

A 25 Some therefore of them of Jerusalem said, Is not this he whom they seek to kill? 26 And lo, he speaketh openly, and they say nothing unto him. Can it be that the rulers indeed know that this is the Christ? 27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when the Christ cometh, no one knoweth whence he is. 28 Jesus therefore cried in the temple, teaching and saying, Ye both know me, and know whence I am; and I am not come of myself, but he that sent me is true, whom ye know not. 29 I know him; because I am from him, and he sent me. 30 They sought therefore to take him: and no man laid his hand on him, because his hour was not yet come. 31 But of the multitude many believed on him; and they said, When the Christ shall come, will he do more signs than those which this man hath done? 32 The Pharisees heard the multitude murmuring these things concerning him; and the chief priests and the Pharisees sent officers to take him. 33 Jesus therefore said, Yet a little while am I with you, and I go unto him that sent me. 34 Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, ye cannot come. 35 The Jews therefore said among themselves, Whither will this man go that we shall not find him? will he go unto the Dispersion among the Greeks, and teach the Greeks? 36 What is this word that he said, Ye shall seek me, and shall not find me: and where I am, ye cannot come? 37 Now on the last day, the great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto me, and drink. 38 He that believeth on me, as the scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. 39 But this spake he of the Spirit, which they that believed on him were to receive: 'for the Spirit was not yet given; because Jesus was not yet glorified.'

E On the promise of the Spirit after the death of Jesus, compare §150 portion E

F 40 Some of the multitude therefore, when they heard these words, said, This is of a truth the prophet. 41 Others said, This is the Christ. But some said, What, doth the Christ come out of Galilee? 42 Hath not the scripture said that the Christ cometh of the seed of David, and from Bethlehem, the village where David was? 43 So there arose a division in the multitude because of him. 44 And some of them would have taken him; but no man laid hands on him.

G Compare §24 portion B
Compare §24 portion E
Compare §38 portion X

G 45 The officers therefore came to the chief priests and Pharisees; and they said unto them, Why did ye not bring him? 46 The officers answered, Never man so spake. 47 The Pharisees therefore answered them, Are ye also led astray? 48 Hath any of the rulers believed on him, or of the Pharisees? 49 But this multitude which knoweth not the law are accursed.

H For other references to Nicodemus, compare §161 A and §218 E

Nicodemus saith unto them (he that came to him before, being one of them), 51 Doth our law judge a man, except it first hear from

ERV margin: 1 Greek of 2 Some ancient authorities read for the Holy Spirit was not yet given

OT references: John 7:43 = 2 Samuel 7:12-17 and Micah 5:2

D Compare §209 portion M

H For other references to Nicodemus, compare §161 A and §218 E

204
§ 190 THE ADULTEROUS WOMAN AND HER ACCUSERS

JOHN 7:53—8:11

And they went every man unto his own house: but Jesus went unto the mount of Olives. And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them. And the scribes and the Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery; and having set her in the midst, they said unto him, Master, this woman hath committed adultery, in the very act. Now in the law Moses commanded us to stone such: what then sayest thou of her? And they said, Master, she hath done a thing worthy of death. He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her. And again he stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. But when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her. And again he stooped down, and with his finger wrote on the ground. And they, when they had heard it, went out one by one, beginning from the eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman, where she was, in the midst. And Jesus lifted up himself, and said unto her, Woman, where are they? did no man condemn thee? And she said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said, Neither do I condemn thee: go thy way; from henceforth sin no more.

§ 191 DISCOURSE ON THE LIGHT OF LIFE

JOHN 8:12—20

And Jesus spake unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in the darkness, but shall have the light of life.

Thou bearest witness of thyself; thy witness is not true. Jesus answered and said unto them, Even if I bear witness of myself, my witness is true; for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye know not whence I come, or whither I go.

Ye judge after the flesh; I judge my judgement is true; for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.

Yea and in your law it is written, that the witness of two men is true. I am he that beareth witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me. They said therefore unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye know neither me, nor my Father: if ye knew me, ye would know my Father also.

These words spake he in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man took him; because his hour was not yet come.

§ 192 THE IDENTITY OF JESUS

He said therefore again unto them, I go away, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sin: whither I go, ye cannot come. The Jews therefore said, Will he kill himself, that he saith, Whither I go, ye cannot come? And he said unto them, Ye
Mt-Mk-Lk

are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. 24 I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for except ye believe that I am He, ye shall die in your sins. 25 They said therefore unto him, Who art thou? Jesus said unto them, *Even that which I have also spoken unto you from the beginning.

B 26 I have many things to speak and to judge concerning you: howbeit he that sent me is true; and the things which I heard from him, these speak I unto the world.

27 They perceived not that he spake to them of the Father.

C 28 Jesus therefore said, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am He, and that I do nothing of myself, but as the Father taught me, I speak these things. 29 And he that sent me is with me; he hath not left me alone; for I do always the things that are pleasing to him. 30 As he spake these things, many believed on him.

§ 193 DISCOURSE ON FREEDOM THROUGH TRUTH

JOHN 8:31-59

A 31 Jesus therefore said to those Jews which had believed him, If ye abide in my word, then are ye truly my disciples; 32 and ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. 33 They answered unto him, We be Abraham’s seed, and have never yet been in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free? 34 Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Every one that committeth sin is the bondservant of sin. 35 And the bondservant abideth not in the house for ever: the son abideth for ever. 36 If therefore the Son shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.

B 37 I know that ye are Abraham’s seed; yet ye seek to kill me, because my word hath not free course in you. 38 I speak the things which I have seen of my Father: and ye also do the things which ye heard from your father. 39 They answered and said unto him, Our father is Abraham. Jesus saith unto them, If ye were Abraham’s children, ye would do the works of Abraham. 40 But now ye seek to kill me, a man that hath told you the truth, which I heard from God: this did not Abraham. 41 Ye do the works of your father.

C They said unto him, We were not born of fornication: we have one Father, even God. 42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I came forth and am come unto you: but as it is, he that sent me is true, whom ye believe not. 43 Why do ye not understand my speech? Even because ye cannot hear my word. 44 Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father it is your will to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. 45 When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father thereof. 46 But because I say the truth, ye believe me not. 47 Which of you convinceth me of sin? If I speak truth, why do ye not believe me? 48 He that is of God heareth the words of God: for this cause ye hear them not, because ye are not of God.

D 48 The Jews answered and said unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and hast a *devil? 49 Jesus answered, I have not a *devil; but I honour my Father, and ye dishonour me. 50 But I seek not mine own glory: there is one that seeketh and judgeth.

ERV margin: 1 Or I am 2 Or, How is it that I even speak to you at all? 3 Greek into 4 Or I am Or I am he: and I do 5 Or hath no place in you 6 Or the Father: do ye also therefore the things which ye heard from the Father 7 Greek are 8 Some ancient authorities read ye do the works of Abraham 9 Or know 10 Some ancient authorities read standeth 11 Or When one speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for his father also is a liar 12 Greek
demon

206
E 51 Verily, verily, I say unto you, If a man keep my word, he shall never see death. 52 The Jews said unto him, Now we know that thou hast a ‘devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou sayest, If a man keep my word, he shall never taste of death. 53 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makest thou thyself? 54 Jesus answered, If I glorify myself, my glory is nothing: it is my Father that glorifieth me; of whom ye say, that he is your God; 55 and ye have not known him: but I know him; and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be like unto you, a liar: but I know him, and keep his word. 56 Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day; and he saw it, and was glad. 57 The Jews therefore said unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? 58 Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham 3was, I am. 59 They took up stones therefore to cast at him: but Jesus hid himself, and went out of the temple. 4

ERV margin: 1 Greek demon 2 Or that he should see 3 Greek was born 4 Or was hidden, and went, etc. 5 Many ancient authorities add and going through the midst of them went his way, and so passed by
CHAPTER XI

AT THE FEAST OF THE DEDICATION

§ 194 THE BLIND BEGGER OF JERUSALEM

JOHN 9:1-12

A 1 And as he passed by, he saw a man blind from his birth. 2 And his disciples asked him, saying, Rabbi, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he should be born blind? 3 Jesus answered, Neither did this man sin, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

B 4 We must work the works of him that sent me, while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work. 5 When I am in the world, I am the light of the world.

C 6 When he had thus spoken, he spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and anointed his eyes with the clay, 7 and said unto him, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam (which is by interpretation, Sent). He went away therefore, and was washed, and came seeing.

D 8 The neighbours therefore, and they which saw him aforetime, that he was a beggar, said, Is not this he that sat and begged? 9 Others said, It is he: others said, No, but he is like him. He said, I am He. 10 They said therefore unto him, How then were thine eyes opened? 11 He answered, The man that is called Jesus made clay, and anointed mine eyes, and said unto me, Go to Siloam, and wash: so I went away and washed, and I received sight. 12 And they said unto him, Where is he? He saith, I know not.

§ 195 CONTROVERSY ABOUT THE BEGGER AND JESUS

JOHN 9:13-34

A 13 They bring to the Pharisees him that aforetime was blind. 14 Now it was the sabbath on the day when Jesus made the clay, and opened his eyes. 15 Again therefore the Pharisees also asked him how he received his sight. And he said unto them, He put clay upon mine eyes, and I washed, and did see.

B 16 Some therefore of the Pharisees said, This man is not from God, because he keepeth not the sabbath. But others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such signs? And there was a division among them. 17 They say therefore unto the blind man again, What sayest thou of him, in that he opened thine eyes? And he said, He is a prophet.

C 18 The Jews therefore did not believe concerning him, that he had been blind, and had received his sight, until they called the parents of him that had received his sight, 19 and asked them, saying, Is this your son, who ye say was born blind? how then doth he now see? 20 His parents answered and said, We know that this is our son, and that he was born blind: 21 but how he now seeth, we know not; or who opened his eyes, we know not: ask him; he is of age; he shall speak for himself. 22 These things said his parents, because they feared the Jews: for the Jews had agreed already, that if any man should confess...
Mt-Mk-Lk

John 9

him to be Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue. 23 Therefore said his parents, He is of age; ask him.

D

24 So they called a second time the man that was blind, and said unto him, Give glory to God: we know that this man is a sinner. 25 He therefore answered, Whether he be a sinner, I know not: one thing I know, that whereas I was blind, now I see. 26 They said therefore unto him, What did he to thee? how opened he thine eyes? 27 He answered them, I told you even now, and ye did not hear: wherefore would ye hear it again? would ye also become his disciples? 28 And they reviled him, and said, Thou art his disciple; but we are disciples of Moses. 29 We know that God hath spoken unto Moses: but as for this man, we know not whence he is. 30 The man answered and said unto them, Why, herein is the marvel, that ye know not whence he is, and yet he opened mine eyes. 31 We know that God heareth not sinners: but if any man be a worshipper of God, and do his will, him he heareth. 32 Since the world began it was never heard that any one opened the eyes of a man born blind. 33 If this man were not from God, he could do nothing. 34 They answered and said unto him, Thou wast altogether born in sins, and dost thou teach us? And they cast him out.

§ 196 TRUE SIGHT AND FALSE SIGHT

John 9:35-41

A 35 Jesus heard that they had cast him out; and finding him, he said, Dost thou believe on the Son of God? 36 He answered and said, And who is he, Lord, that I may believe on him? 37 Jesus said unto him, Thou hast both seen him, and he it is that speaketh with thee. 38 And he said, Lord, I believe. And he worshipped him.

B 39 And Jesus said, For judgement came I into this world, that they which see not may see; and that they which see may become blind. 40 Those of the Pharisees which were with him heard these things, and said unto him, Are we also blind? 41 Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye would have no sin: but now ye say, We see: your sin remaineth.

§ 197 DISCOURSE ON THE SHEEP AND THE SHEPHERD

John 10:1-21

A 1 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the door into the fold of the sheep, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. 2 But he that entereth in by the door is the shepherd of the sheep. 3 To him the porter openeth; and the sheep hear his voice: and he calleth his own sheep by name, and leadeth them out. 4 When he hath put forth all his own, he goeth before them, and the sheep follow him: for they know his voice. 5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers. 6 This parable spake Jesus unto them: but they understood not what things they were which he spake unto them.

B 7 Jesus therefore said unto them again, Verily, verily, I say unto you, I am the door of the sheep. 8 All that came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. 9 I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and go out, and shall find pasture. 10 The thief cometh not, but that he may steal, and kill, and destroy: I came that they may have life, and may have it abundantly.

C 11 I am the good shepherd: the good shepherd layeth down his life for the sheep. 12 He that is a hireling, and not a shepherd, whose own the sheep
are not, beholdeth the wolf coming, and leaveth the sheep, and
fleeth, and the wolf snatcheth them, and scattereth them: 13 he
fleeth because he is a hireling, and careth not for the sheep.

D 14 I
am the good shepherd; and I know mine own, and mine own
know me, 15 even as the Father knoweth me, and I know the
Father; and I lay down my life for the sheep.

E 16 And other sheep
I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and
they shall hear my voice; and they shall become one flock, one
shepherd.

F 17 Therefore doth the Father love me, because I lay
down my life, that I may take it again. 18 No one taketh it
away from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have power to lay
it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment
received I from my Father.

G 19 There arose a division again among the Jews because of
these words. 20 And many of them said, He hath a devil, and
is mad; why hear ye him? 21 Others said, These are not the
sayings of one possessed with a devil. Can a devil open the
eyes of the blind?

§ 198 BASES OF A CHARGE OF BLASPHEMY

JOHN 10:22-39

A 22 *And it was the feast of the dedication at Jerusalem: it was
winter; 23 and Jesus was walking in the temple in Solomon's
porch. 24 The Jews therefore came round about him, and said
unto him, How long dost thou hold us in suspense? If thou art
the Christ, tell us plainly. 25 Jesus answered them, I told you,
ye believe not: the works that I do in my Father's name, these
bear witness of me.

B 26 But ye believe not, because ye are not of
my sheep. 27 My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and
they follow me: 28 and I give unto them eternal life; and they
shall never perish, and no one shall snatch them out of my hand.
29 *My Father, which hath given them unto me, is greater than
all; and no one is able to snatch them out of the Father's hand.

C 30 I and the Father are one. 31 The Jews took up stones again
to stone him. 32 Jesus answered them. Many good works have
I shewed you from the Father; for which of those works do ye
stone me? 33 The Jews answered him, For a good work we stone
thee not, but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man,
makest thyself God.

D 34 Jesus answered them, Is it not written in
your law, I said, Ye are gods? 35 If he called them gods, unto
whom the word of God came (and the scripture cannot be broken),
36 say ye of him, whom, the Father *sanctified and sent into the
world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God?
E 37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. 38 But
if I do them, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that
ye may know and understand that the Father is in me, and I in
the Father. 39 They sought again to take him: and he went forth
out of their hand.
CHAPTER XII
IN THE REGION OF JERUSALEM

§ 199 WITHDRAWAL TO BETHANY BEYOND JORDAN

John 10:40-42
40 And he went away again beyond Jordan into the place where John was at the first baptizing; and there he abode. 41 And many came unto him; and they said, John indeed did no sign: but all things whatsoever John spake of this man were true. 42 And many believed on him there.

§ 200 RETURN TO BETHANY NEAR JERUSALEM

John 11:1-16
1 Now a certain man was sick, Lazarus of Bethany, of the village of Mary and her sister Martha. 2 And it was that Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whose brother Lazarus was sick. 3 The sisters therefore sent unto him, saying, Lord, behold, he whom thou lovest is sick. 4 But when Jesus heard it, he said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God may be glorified thereby. 5 Now Jesus loved Martha, and her sister, and Lazarus.

b 6 When therefore he heard that he was sick, he abode at that time two days in the place where he was. 7 Then after this he saith to the disciples, Let us go into Judea again. 8 The disciples say unto him, Rabbi, the Jews were but now seeking to stone thee; and goest thou thither again? 9 Jesus answered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If a man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world. 10 But if a man walk in the night, he stumbleth, because the light is not in him.

c 11 These things spake he: and after this he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus is fallen asleep; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep. 12 The disciples therefore said unto him, Lord, if he is fallen asleep, he will 'recover. 13 Now Jesus had spoken of his death: but they thought that he spake of taking rest in sleep. 14 Then Jesus therefore said unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead. 15 And I am glad for your sakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe; nevertheless let us go unto him.

b 16 Thomas therefore, who is called Didymus, said unto his fellow-disciples, Let us also go, that we may die with him.

§ 201 CONCERNING LAZARUS OF BETHANY

John 11:17-44

A 17 So when Jesus came, he found that he had been in the tomb four days already. 18 Now Bethany was nigh unto Jerusalem, about fifteen furlongs off; 19 and many of the Jews had come to Martha and Mary, to console them concerning their brother.

b 20 Martha therefore, when she heard that Jesus was coming, went and met him: but Mary still sat in the house. 21 Martha therefore said unto Jesus, Lord, if thou hastad been here, my

ERV margin: 1 Greek be saved 2 That is Twin

A On the anointing of Jesus by Mary, compare § 204 portion b
Mt-Mk-Lk

John 11

brother had not died. 22 And even now I know that, whatsoever thou shalt ask of God, God will give thee. 23 Jesus saith unto her, Thy brother shall rise again. 24 Martha saith unto him, I know that he shall rise again in the resurrection at the last day. 25 Jesus said unto her, I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth on me, though he die, yet shall he live: 26 and whatsoever liveth and believeth on me shall never die. Believest thou this? 27 She saith unto him, Yea, Lord: I have believed that thou art the Christ, the Son of God, even he that cometh into the world.

C 28 And when she had said this, she went away, and called Mary her sister secretly, saying, The Master is here, and calleth thee. 29 And she, when she heard it, arose quickly, and went unto him. 30 (Now Jesus was not yet come into the village, but was still in the place where Martha met him.) 31 The Jews then which were with her in the house, and were comforting her, when they saw Mary, that she rose up quickly and went out, followed her, supposing that she was going unto the tomb to weep there. 32 Mary therefore, when she came where Jesus was, and saw him, fell down at his feet, saying unto him, Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died.

D 33 When Jesus therefore saw her weeping, and the Jews also weeping which came with her, he groaned in the spirit, and was troubled, 34 and said, Where have ye laid him? They say unto him, Lord, come and see. 35 Jesus wept. 36 The Jews therefore said, Behold how he loved him! 37 But some of them said, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of him that was blind, have caused that this man also should not die?

E 38 Jesus therefore again groaning in himself cometh to the tomb. Now it was a cave, and a stone lay against it. 39 Jesus saith, Take ye away the stone. Martha, the sister of him that was dead, saith unto him, Lord, by this time he stinketh: for he hath been dead four days. 40 Jesus saith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that if thou believedst, thou shouldst see the glory of God? 41 So they took away the stone.

F And Jesus lifted up his eyes, and said, Father, I thank thee that thou heardest me. 42 And I knew that thou hearest me always: but because of the multitude which stoodeth around me I said it, that they may believe that thou didst send me. 43 And when he had thus spoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth. 44 He that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with grave-clothes; and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jesus saith unto them, Loose him, and let him go.

§ 202 Plots for the Death of Jesus

John 11:45-53

A 45 Many therefore of the Jews, which came to Mary and beheld that which he did, believed on him. 46 But some of them went away to the Pharisees, and told them the things which Jesus had done.

B 47 The chief priests therefore and the Pharisees gathered a council, and said, What do we? for this man doeth many signs. 48 If we let him thus alone, all men will believe on him: and the Romans will come and take away both our place and our nation.

C 49 But a certain one of them, Caiphas, being high priest that year, said unto them, Ye know nothing at all, 50 nor do ye take account that it is expedient for you that one man should die for the people, and that the whole nation perish not.

ERV margin: 1 Or her sister, saying secretly 2 Or Teacher 3 Greek weal 4 Greek waiting 5 Or was moved with indignation in the spirit 6 Greek troubled himself 7 Or being moved with indignation in himself 8 Or upon 9 Or grave-bands 10 Many ancient authorities read the things which he did
c Compare §315 portion a
§ 203 WITHDRAWAL OF JESUS TO EPHRAIM

JOHN 11:54-57

A 54 Jesus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews, but departed thence into the country near to the wilderness, into a city called Ephraim; and there he tarried with the disciples.

B 55 Now the passover of the Jews was at hand: and many went up to Jerusalem out of the country before the passover, to purify themselves. 56 They sought therefore for Jesus, and spake one with another, as they stood in the temple, What think ye? That he will not come to the feast?

C 57 Now the chief priests and the Pharisees had given commandment, that, if any man knew where he was, he should shew it, that they might take him.

§ 204 THE SUPPER TO JESUS AT BETHANY

JOHN 12:1-11

A 1 Jesus therefore six days before the passover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was, whom Jesus raised from the dead. 2 So they made him a supper there: and Martha served; but Lazarus was one of them that sat at meat with him.

B 3 Mary therefore took a pound of ointment of spikenard, very precious, and anointed the feet of Jesus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the house was filled with the odour of the ointment.

C 4 But Judas Iscariot, one of his disciples, which should betray him, saith, 5 Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor? 6 Now this he said, not because he cared for the poor; but because he was a thief, and having the bag took away what was put therein.

E 7 Jesus therefore said, Suffer her to keep it against the day of my burying. 8 For the poor ye have always with you; but me ye have not always.

P 9 The common people therefore of the Jews learned that he was there: and they came, not for Jesus’ sake only, but that they might see Lazarus also, whom he had raised from the dead. 10 But the chief priests took counsel that they might put Lazarus also to death; 11 because that by reason of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jesus.

ERV margin: 1 Greek pistis nard, pistic being perhaps a local name: others take it to mean genuine; others liquid. 2 The word in the Greek denotes a coin worth about eight pence halfpenny. 3 Or bow 4 Or carried what was put therein 5 Or Let her alone: it was that she might keep it

D Compare §209 portion K
CHAPTER XIII

CHALLENGE TO THE JERUSALEM LEADERS

§ 205 JESUS ENTERS JERUSALEM AS A POPULAR LEADER

JOHN 12:12-19

A 12 On the morrow a great multitude that had come to the feast, when they heard that Jesus was coming to Jerusalem, 13 took the branches of the palm trees, and went forth to meet him,

B and cried out, Hosanna: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord, even the King of Israel.

C 14 And Jesus, having found a young ass, sat thereon;

D as it is written, 15 Fear not, daughter of Zion: behold, thy King cometh, sitting on an ass's colt. 16 These things understood not his disciples at the first: but when Jesus was glorified, then remembered they that these things were written of him, and that they had done these things unto him.

E 17 The multitude therefore that was with him when he called Lazarus out of the tomb, and raised him from the dead, bare witness. 18 For this cause also the multitude went and met him, for that they heard that he had done this sign.

F 19 The Pharisees therefore said among themselves, Behold how ye prevail nothing: lo, the world is gone after him.

§ 206 INTIMATIONS OF THE IMPELLING DEATH OF JESUS

JOHN 12:20-36

A 20 Now there were certain Greeks among those that went up to worship at the feast: 21 these therefore came to Philip, which was of Bethsaida of Galilee, and asked him, saying, Sir, we would see Jesus. 22 Philip cometh and telleth Andrew: Andrew cometh, and Philip, and they tell Jesus.

B 23 And Jesus answereth them, saying, The hour is come, that the Son of man should be glorified.

C 24 Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except a grain of wheat fall into the earth and die, it abideth by itself alone; but if it die, it beareth much fruit.

D 25 He that loveth his life loseth it; and he that hateth his life in this world shall keep it unto life eternal. 26 If any man serve me, let him follow me; and where I am, there shall also my servant be: if any man serve me, him will the Father honour.

E 27 Now is my soul troubled; and what shall I say? Father, save me from this hour. But for this cause came I unto this hour. 28 Father, glorify thy name. There came therefore a voice out of heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again. 29 The multitude therefore, that stood by, and heard it, said that it had thundered: others said, An angel hath spoken to him. 30 Jesus answered and said, This voice hath not come to my sake, but for your sakes.

ERV margin: 1 Some ancient authorities read the common people 2 Or Ye behold 3 Or soul 4 Or hour?


217
§ 206

RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

Mt-Mk-Lk

E With verse 31b compare verse 18 of §82 portion R

E 31 Now is 'the judgement of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. 32 And I, if I be lifted up 'from the earth, will draw all men unto myself. 33 But this he said, signifying by what manner of death he should die. 34 The multitude therefore answered him, We have heard out of the law that the Christ abideth for ever: and how sayest thou, The Son of man must be lifted up? who is this Son of man?

F 35 Jesus therefore said unto them, Yet a little while is the light 'among you. Walk while ye have the light, that darkness overtake you not: and he that walketh in the darkness knoweth not whither he goeth. 36 While ye have the light, believe on the light, that ye may become sons of light.

§ 207

UNBELIEF AND BELIEF IN JESUS

John 12:36b-43

A 36 These things spake Jesus, and he departed and hid himself from them. 37 But though he had done so many signs before them, yet they believed not on him: 38 that the word of Isaiah the prophet might be fulfilled, which he spake, Lord, who hath believed our report? And to whom hath the arm of the Lord been revealed?

B Compare §47 portion J

B 39 For this cause they could not believe, for that Isaiah said again,

40 He hath blinded their eyes, and he hardened their heart;
Lest they should see with their eyes, and perceive with their heart,
And should turn,
And I should heal them.

41 These things said Isaiah, because he saw his glory; and he spake of him.

C 42 Nevertheless even of the rulers many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess 'th, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: 43 for they loved the glory of men more than the glory of God.

§ 208

THE SOURCE OF THE TRUTH IN JESUS

John 12:44-50

A Compare §57 portion P

A 44 And Jesus cried and said, He that believeth on me, believeth not on me, but on him that sent me. 45 And he that beheldeth me beheldeth him that sent me.

B Compare §78 portion G

B 46 I am come a light into the world, that whosoever believeth on me may not abide in the darkness.

C Compare §82 portion Q

C 47 And if any man hear my sayings, and keep them not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. 48 He that rejecteth me, and receiveveth not my sayings, hath one that judgeth him: the word that I spake, the same shall judge him in the last day.

D 49 For I spake not from myself; but the Father which sent me, he hath given me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. 50 And I know that his commandment is life eternal: the things therefore which I speak, even as the Father hath said unto me, so I speak.
CHAPTER XIV

FINAL HOURS WITH DISCIPLES

§ 209 THE PASSOVER WITH THE DISCIPLES

JOHN 13:1-38

A 1 Now before the feast of the passover, Jesus knowing that his hour was come that he should depart out of this world unto the Father, having loved his own which were in the world, he loved them unto the end.

B 2 And during supper, the devil having already put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray him, 3 Jesus, knowing that the Father had given all things into his hands, and that he came forth from God, and goeth unto God, 4 riseth from supper, and layeth aside his garments; and he took a towel, and girded himself. 5 Then he poureth water into the basin, and began to wash the disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith he was girded.

C 6 So he cometh to Simon Peter. He saith unto him, Lord, dost thou wash my feet? 7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt understand hereafter. 8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with me. 9 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. 10 Jesus saith to him, He that is bathed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is clean every whit: and ye are clean, but not all. 11 For he knew him that should betray him; therefore said he, Ye are not all clean.

D 12 So when he had washed their feet, and taken his garments, and sat down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? 13 Ye call me, 'Master, and, Lord: and ye say well; for so I am. 14 If I then, the Lord and the 'Master, have washed your feet, ye also ought to wash one another's feet. 15 For I have given you an example, that ye also should do as I have done to you.

ERV margin: 1 Or to the uttermost 2 Some ancient authorities omit save, and his feet 3 Greek reclined 4 Or Teacher 5 Greek bondservant 6 Greek an apostle 7 Or chose 8 Many ancient authorities read his bread with me 9 Or I am

JT references: John 13:18 = Psalm 41:9

x Compare §211 portion X

219
§ 209

RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

Mt-Mk-Lk

John 13
23 There was at the table reclining in Jesus’ bosom one of his disciples, whom Jesus loved. 24 Simon Peter therefore beckoneth to him, and saith unto him, Tell us who it is of whom he speaketh. 25 He leaning back, as he was, on Jesus’ breast saith unto him, Lord, who is it?

Jesus therefore answereth. He it is, for whom I shall dip the sop, and give it him. So when he had dipped the sop, he taketh and giveth it to Judas, the son of Simon Iscariot. 27 And after the sop, then entered Satan into him.

K

Jesus therefore saith unto him, That thou dost, do quickly. 28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he spake this unto him. 29 For some thought, because Judas had the bag, that Jesus said unto him, Buy what things we have need of for the feast; or, that he should give something to the poor. 30 He then having received the sop went out straightway: and it was night.

L 31 When therefore he was gone out, Jesus saith, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him; 32 and God shall glorify him in himself, and straightway shall he glorify him.

M NW 33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye shall seek me: and as I said unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; so now I say unto you.

NN 34 A new commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another; even as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. 35 By this shall all men know that ye are my disciples, if ye have love one to another.

O 36 Simon Peter saith unto him, Lord, whither goest thou? Jesus answered, Whither I go, thou canst not follow me now; but thou shalt follow afterwards. 37 Peter saith unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee even now? I will lay down my life for thee. 38 Jesus answereth, Will thou lay down thy life for me? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, The cock shall not crow, till thou hast denied me thrice.

§ 210

FAREWELL DISCOURSES OF JESUS

John 14:1-31

A 1 Let not your heart be troubled: 4 ye believe in God, believe also in me. 2 In my Father’s house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. 3 And if I go and prepare a place for you, I come again, and will receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.

B 4 4 And whither I go, ye know the way. 5 Thomas saith unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest; how know we the way? 6 Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, and the truth, and the life: no one cometh unto the Father, but by me.

C 7 If ye had known me, ye would have known my Father also: from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him. 8 Philip saith unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us. 9 Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and dost thou not know me, Philip? he that hath seen me hath seen the Father; how sayest thou, Shew us the Father? 10 Believeth thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I say unto you I speak not from myself: but the Father abiding in me

ERV margin:
1 Or box 2 Or was 3 Or even as I loved you, that ye also may love one another 4 Or believe in God 5 Or abiding-places 6 Many ancient authorities read And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know 7 Or

1 For other references to the disciple whom Jesus loved, compare §217 K, §219 K, §323 AC and §323 A
K Compare §604 portion D
M Compare §180 portion D
N Compare §211 portion E
B Compare §211 portion L

220
doeth his works. 11 Believe me that I am in the Father, and the
Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake.
12 Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me, the
works that I do shall he do also; and greater works than these
shall he do; because I go unto the Father.

13 And whatsoever ye shall ask in my name, that will I do, that the Father may be glori-
ified in the Son. 14 If ye shall ask me anything in my name, that
will I do.

15 If ye love me, ye will keep my commandments.
16 And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another
Comforter, that he may be with you for ever; 17 even the Spirit
of truth: whom the world cannot receive; for it beholdeth him
not, neither knoweth him: ye know him; for he abideth with you,
and shall be in you.

18 I will not leave you desolate: I come unto you. 19 Yet a little while, and
the world beholdeth me no more; but ye behold me: because I live, ye shall live also. 20 In
that day ye shall know that I am in my Father, and ye in me, and
I in you.

21 He that hath my commandments, and keepeth them,
he it is that loveth me: and he that loveth me shall be loved of
my Father, and I will love him, and will manifest myself unto him.
22 Judas (not Iscariot) saith unto him, Lord, what is come to pass
that thou wilt manifest thyself unto us, and not unto the world? 23 Jesus answered and said unto him, If a man love me, he will
keep my word: and my Father will love him, and we will come
unto him, and make our abode with him. 24 He that loveth me not
keepeth not my words: and the word which ye hear is not
mine, but the Father's who sent me.

25 These things have I spoken unto you, while ye abiding with
you. 26 But the Comforter, even the Holy Spirit, whom the
Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things,
and bring to your remembrance all that I said unto you.

27 Peace I leave with you; my peace I give unto you: not as the world
giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither
let it be fearful. 28 Ye heard how I said to you, I go away, and
I come unto you. If ye loved me, ye would have rejoiced, be-
cause I go unto the Father: for the Father is greater than I.

29 And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when
it is come to pass, ye may believe. 30 I will no more speak much
with you, for the prince of the world cometh: and he hath nothing
in me; 31 but that the world may know that I love the Father,
and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise,
let us go hence.

§ 211  FAREWELL DISCOURSES OF JESUS (concluded)

A 1 I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.
2 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit, he taketh it away:
and every branch that beareth fruit, he cleanseth it, that it may
bear more fruit. 3 Already ye are clean because of the word which
I have spoken unto you.

B 4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the
branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; so
neither can ye, except ye abide in me. 5 I am the vine, ye are the
branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same beareth
much fruit: for apart from me ye can do nothing. 6 If a man
abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered;
and they gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned.
c 7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ask whatsoever ye will, and it shall be done unto you. 8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; and so shall ye be my disciples.

d 9 Even as the Father hath loved me, I also have loved you; abide ye in my love.

f 10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love. 11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy may be in you, and that your joy may be fulfilled.

g 12 This is my commandment, that ye love one another, even as I have loved you. 13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends. 14 Ye are my friends, if ye do the things which I command you. 15 No longer do I call you servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard from my Father I have made known unto you.

h 16 Ye did not choose me, but I chose you, and appointed you, that ye should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should abide: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you. 17 These things I command you, that ye may love one another.

i 18 If the world hateth you, ye know that it hateth me before it hated you. 19 If ye were of the world, the world would love its own: but because ye are not of the world, but I chose you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.

j 20 Remember the word that I said unto you, A servant is not greater than his lord. If they persecuted me, they will also persecute you; if they kept my word, they will keep yours also. 21 But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me.

k 22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no excuse for their sin. 23 He that hateth me hateth my Father also. 24 If I had not done among them the works which none other did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father.

l 25 But the comforter, that is, the holy ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, even he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

m 26 And when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, even the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall bear witness of me: 27 And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

n 16:1 These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be made to stumble. 2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the hour cometh, that whosoever killeth you shall think that he offereth service unto God. 3 And these things will they do, because they have not known the Father, nor me.

o 4 But these things have I spoken unto you, that when their hour is come, ye may remember them, how that I told you.

p And these things I said not unto you from the beginning, because I was with you. 5 But now I go unto him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou? 6 But because I have spoken these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.

q 7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away: for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I go, I will
send him unto you. 8 And he, when he is come, will convict the world in respect of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement: 9 of sin, because they believe not on me; 10 of righteousness, because I go to the Father, and ye behold me no more; 11 of judgement, because the prince of this world hath been judged.

N 12 I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. 13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he shall guide you into all the truth: for he shall not speak from himself; but what things soever he shall hear, these shall he speak: and he shall declare unto you the things that are to come. 14 He shall glorify me: for he shall take of mine, and shall declare it unto you. 15 All things whatsoever the Father hath are mine: therefore said I, that he taketh of mine, and shall declare it unto you.

O 16 A little while, and ye behold me no more; and again a little while, and ye shall see me. 17 Some of his disciples therefore said one to another, What is this that he saith unto us, A little while, and ye behold me not; and again a little while, and ye shall see me: and, Because I go to the Father? 18 They said therefore, What is this that he saith, A little while? We know not what he saith. 19 Jesus perceived that they were desirous to ask him, and he said unto them, Do ye inquire among yourselves concerning this, that I said, A little while, and ye behold me not, and again a little while, and ye shall see me?

P 20 Verily, verily, I say unto you, that ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. 21 A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but when she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for the joy that a man is born into the world. 22 And ye therefore now have sorrow: but I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no one taketh away from you.

Q 23 And in that day ye shall ask me nothing. Verily, verily, I say unto you, If ye shall ask anything of the Father, he will give it you in my name. 24 Hitherto have ye asked nothing in my name: ask, and ye shall receive, that your joy may be fulfilled.

R 25 These things have I spoken unto you in *proverbs: the hour cometh, when I shall no more speak unto you in *proverbs, but shall tell you plainly of the Father.

S 26 In that day ye shall ask in my name: and I say not unto you, that I will *pray the Father for you; 27 for the Father himself loveth you, because ye have loved me, and have believed that I came forth from the Father.

T 28 I came out from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go unto the Father. 29 His disciples say, Lo, now speakest thou plainly, and speakest no *proverb. 30 Now know we that thou knowest all things, and needest not that any man should ask thee: by this we believe that thou camest forth from God.

U 31 Jesus answered them, Do ye now believe? 32 Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me.

V 33 These things have I spoken unto you, that in me ye may have peace. In the world ye have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world.

ERV margin: 1 Or ask me no question 2 Or parables 3 Greek make request of 4 Or parable

OT references: John 16:22 = Isaiah 66:14

223
§ 212 FAREWELL PRAYER OF JESUS

MT-MK-Lk

B With verse 2a compare §41Q and §82T and §151B

John 17:1-26

A 1 These things spake Jesus; and lifting up his eyes to heaven, he said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that the Son may glorify thee:

B 2 even as thou gavest him authority over all flesh, that whatsoever thou hast given him, to them he should give eternal life. 3 And this is life eternal, that they should know thee the only true God, and him whom thou didst send, even Jesus Christ.

C 4 I glorified thee on the earth, having accomplished the work which thou hast given me to do. 5 And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was.

D 6 I manifested thy name unto the men whom thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them to me; and they have kept thy word.

7 Now they know that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are from thee: 8 for the words which thou gavest me I have given unto them; and they received them, and knew of a truth that I came forth from thee, and they believed that thou didst send me.

E 9 I pray for them: I pray not for the world, but for those whom thou hast given me; for they are thine: 10 and all things that are mine are thine, and thine are mine: and I am glorified in them. 11 And I am no more in the world, and these are in the world, and I come to thee.

F Holy Father, keep them in thy name which thou hast given me, that they may be one, even as we are.

12 While I was with them, I kept them in thy name which thou hast given me: and I guarded them, and not one of them perished, but the son of perdition; that the scripture might be fulfilled.

13 But now I come to thee; and these things I speak in the world, that they may have my joy fulfilled in themselves.

G 14 I have given them thy word; and the world hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 15 I pray not that thou shouldest take them 2 from the world, but that thou shouldest keep them 3 from 4the evil one. 16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.

H With verse 18 compare §56C and §82A

17 Sanctify them in the truth: thy word is truth. 18 As thou didst send me into the world, even so sent I them into the world. 19 And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they themselves also may be sanctified in truth.

I 20 Neither for these only do I pray, but for them also that believe on me through their word; 21 that they may all be one; even as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be in us: that the world may believe that thou didst send me.

J 22 And the glory which thou hast given me I have given unto them; that they may be one, even as we are one; 23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be perfected into one; that the world may know that thou didst send me, and lovedst them, even as thou lovedst me.

K 24 Father, 4 that which thou hast given me, I will that, where I am, they also may be with me; that they may behold my glory, which thou hast given me: for thou lovedst me before the foundation of the world.

L 25 O righteous Father, the world knew thee not, but I knew thee; and these knew that thou didst send me; 26 and I made known unto them thy name, and will make it known; that the love wherewith thou lovedst me may be in them, and I in them.

ERV margin:

1 Greek make request 2 Greek out of 3 Or evil 4 Or Consecrate 5 Or consecrate 6 Many

ancient authorities read those whom

OT references: John 17:12=Psalm 42:9

224
§ 213 AT THE PLACE NAMED GETHSEMANE

JOHN 18:1-2

1 When Jesus had spoken these words, he went forth with his disciples over the brook Kidron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, himself and his disciples. 2 Now Judas also, which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jesus oft-times resorted thither with his disciples.

MT-MK-LK

Compare §130A and §140A
Compare §140 portion B

§ 214 BETRAYAL AND ARREST OF JESUS

JOHN 18:3-11

A 3 Judas then, having received the band of soldiers, and officers from the chief priests and the Pharisees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches and weapons.

B 4 Jesus therefore, knowing all the things that were coming upon him, went forth, and saith unto them, Whom seek ye? 5 They answered him, Jesus of Nazareth. Jesus saith unto them, I am he. And Judas also, which betrayed him, was standing with them. 6 When therefore he said unto them, I am he, they went backward, and fell to the ground.

A 7 Again therefore he asked them, Whom seek ye? And they said, Jesus of Nazareth. 8 Jesus answered, I told you that I am he: if therefore ye seek me, let these go their way: 9 that the word might be fulfilled which he spake, Of those whom thou hast given me I lost not one.

C 10 Simon Peter therefore having a sword drew it, and struck the high priest’s servant, and cut off his right ear. 11 Now the servant’s name was Malchus.

D 11 Jesus therefore said unto Peter, Put up the sword into the sheath: the cup which the Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?

A Compare §141 portion A
C Compare §141 portion D
D Compare §141 portion F
Compare §120 portion C
Compare §140 portion C

ERV margin: 1 Or ravine Greek winter-torrent 2 Or of the Cedars 3 Or cohort 4 Greek bondservant

225
CHAPTER XV
JUDICIAL TRIALS AND CRUCIFIXION

§ 315 TRIAL BEFORE THE JEWISH AUTHORITIES

JOHN 18:12–27

A. 12 So the band and the chief captain, and the officers of the Jews, seized Jesus and bound him, 13 and led him to Annas first; for he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was high priest that year. 14 Now Caiaphas was he which gave counsel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man should die for the people.

B. 15 And Simon Peter followed Jesus, and so did another disciple. Now that disciple was known unto the high priest, and entered in with Jesus into the court of the high priest; 16 but Peter was standing at the door without. So the other disciple, which was known unto the high priest, went out and spake unto her that kept the door, and brought in Peter.

C. 17 The maid therefore that kept the door saith unto Peter, Art thou also one of this man's disciples? He saith, I am not.

D. 18 Now the servants and the officers were standing there, having made a fire of coals; for it was cold; and they were warming themselves: and Peter also was with them, standing and warming himself.

E. 19 The high priest therefore asked Jesus of his disciples, and of his teaching. 20 Jesus answered him, I have spoken openly to the world: I ever taught in synagogues, and in the temple, where all the Jews come together; and in secret spake I nothing.

F. 21 Why askest thou me? ask them that have heard me, what I spake unto them: behold, these know the things which I said.

G. 22 And when he had said this, one of the officers standing by struck Jesus on the cheek. 23 Jesus answered him, If I have spoken evil, bear witness of the evil: but if well, why smitest thou me?

H. 24 Annas therefore sent him bound unto Caiaphas the high priest.

I. 25 Now Simon Peter was standing and warming himself. They said therefore unto him, Art thou also one of his disciples? He denied, and said, I am not.

J. 26 One of the servants of the high priest, being a kinsman of him whose ear Peter cut off, saith, Did not I see thee in the garden with him? 27 Peter therefore denied again: and straightway the cock crew.

§ 316 TRIAL BEFORE THE ROMAN AUTHORITIES

JOHN 18:28—19:16

A. 28 They lead Jesus therefore from Caiaphas into theSD palace: and it was early; and they themselves entered not into theSD palace, that they might not be defiled, but might eat the passover.

B. 29 Pilate therefore went out unto them, and saith, What accusation bring ye against this man? 30 They answered and said unto him, If this man were not an evil-doer, we should not have delivered him up unto thee. 31 Pilate therefore said unto

ERV margin: 1 Or cohort 2 Or military tribune Greek chiliarch 3 Greek bondservants 4 Greek a fire of charcoals 5 Greek synagogues 6 Or with a rod 7 Greek Praetorium

A. Compare §142 portion A
C. Compare §142 portion H
D. Compare §142 portion B
E. Compare §142 portion D
With verse 20 compare §141 portion G
F. Compare §142 portion M
G. Compare §142 portion I
H. Compare §142 portion J
Compare §142 portion K

A. Compare §202 portion C

227
them. Take him yourselves, and judge him according to your law. The Jews said unto him, It is not lawful for us to put any man to death: 32 that the word of Jesus might be fulfilled, which he spake, signifying by what manner of death he should die. 33 Pilate therefore entered again into the palace, and called Jesus, and said unto him, Art thou the King of the Jews? 34 Jesus answered, Sayest thou this of thyself, or did others tell it thee concerning me? 35 Pilate answered, Am I a Jew? Thine own nation and the chief priests delivered thee unto me: what hast thou done? 36 Jesus answered, My kingdom is not of this world: if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence. 37 Pilate therefore said unto him, Art thou a king then? Jesus answered, Thou sayest that I am a king. To this end have I been born, and to this end am I come into the world, that I should bear witness unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice. 38 Pilate saith unto him, What is truth? 39 And when he had said this, he went out again unto the Jews, and saith unto them, I find no crime in him. 40 But ye have a custom, that I should release unto you one at the passover: will ye therefore that I release unto you the King of the Jews?

And Pilate saith unto them, Behold, I bring him out to you, that ye may know that I find no crime in him. 4 And Pilate went out again, and saith unto them, Behold, I bring him out to you, that ye may know that I find no crime in him. 5 Jesus therefore came out, wearing the crown of thorns and the purple garment. And Pilate saith unto them, Behold, the man! 6 When therefore the chief priests and the officers saw him, they cried out, saying, Crucify him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Take him yourselves, and crucify him: for I find no crime in him. 7 The Jews answered him, We have a law, and by that law he ought to die, because he made himself the Son of God. 8 When Pilate therefore heard this saying, he was the more afraid; 9 and he entered into the palace again, and saith unto Jesus, Whence art thou? But Jesus gave him no answer. 10 Pilate therefore saith unto him, Speakest thou not unto me? knowest thou not that I have power to release thee, and have power to crucify thee? 11 Jesus answered him, Thou wouldst have no power against me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath greater sin.

12 Upon this Pilate sought to release him: but the Jews cried out, saying, If thou release this man, thou art not Caesar's friend: every one that maketh himself a king speaketh against Caesar. 13 When Pilate therefore heard these words, he brought Jesus out, and sat down on the judgement-seat at a place called The Pavement, but in Hebrew, Gabbatha. 14 Now it was the Preparation of the passover: it was about the sixth hour. And he saith unto the Jews, Behold, your King! 15 They therefore cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them,
§ 217 THE CRUCIFIXION OF JESUS

John 19:16b-30

A 16 They took Jesus therefore: 17 and he went out, bearing the cross for himself, 
B unto the place called The place of a skull, which is called in Hebrew Golgotha: 18 where they crucified him, and with him two others, on either side one, and Jesus in the midst. 19 And Pilate wrote a title also, and put it on the cross. And there was written, JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

C 20 This title therefore read many of the Jews: 'for the place where Jesus was crucified was nigh to the city: and it was written in Hebrew, and in Latin, and in Greek. 21 The chief priests of the Jews therefore said to Pilate, Write not, The King of the Jews; but, that he said, I am King of the Jews. 22 Pilate answered, What I have written I have written.

D 23 The soldiers therefore, when they had crucified Jesus, took his garments, and made four parts, to every soldier a part; and also the coat: now the coat was without seam, woven from the top throughout. 24 They said therefore one to another, Let us not rend it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be: that the scripture might be fulfilled, which saith,

They parted my garments among them, 
And upon my vesture did they cast lots.

These things therefore the soldiers did.

E 25 But there were standing by the cross of Jesus his mother, and his mother's sister, Mary the wife of Clopas, and Mary Magdalene. 26 When Jesus therefore saw his mother, and the disciple standing by, whom he loved, he saith unto his mother, Woman, behold, thy son! 27 Then saith he to the disciple, Behold, thy mother! And from that hour the disciple took her unto his own home.

F 28 After this Jesus, knowing that all things are now finished, that the scripture might be accomplished, saith, I thirst. 29 There was set there a vessel full of vinegar: so they put a sponge full of the vinegar upon hyssop, and brought it to his mouth.

G 30 When Jesus therefore had received the vinegar, he said, It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up his spirit.

§ 218 THE BURIAL OF JESUS

John 19:31-42

A 31 The Jews therefore, because it was the Preparation, that the bodies should not remain on the cross upon the sabbath (for the day of that sabbath was a high day),

B asked of Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away. 32 The soldiers therefore came, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him: 33 but when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his legs: 34 howbeit one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and straightway there came out blood and water.

C 35 And he that hath seen hath borne witness, and his witness is true: and he knoweth that he saith true, that ye also may believe. 36 For
Mt-Mk-Lk

these things came to pass, that the scripture might be fulfilled,
A bone of him shall not be broken. 37 And again another scripture saith, They shall look on him whom they pierced.

D 38 And after these things Joseph of Arimathaea, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly for fear of the Jews, asked of Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus: and Pilate gave him leave. He came therefore, and took away his body.

E× 39 And there came also Nicodemus, he who at the first came to him by night, bringing a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pound weight.

F 40 So they took the body of Jesus, and bound it in linen cloths with the spices, as the custom of the Jews is to bury. 41 Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new tomb wherein was never man yet laid. 42 There then because of the Jews' Preparation (for the tomb was nigh at hand) they laid Jesus.

ERV margin: 1 Or crushed 2 Some ancient authorities read roll

OT references: John 19:37 = Zechariah 12:10

For other references to Nicodemus, compare §161 A and §189 H
CHAPTER XVI

SUBSEQUENT TO THE DEATH OF JESUS

§ 319  THE VISITS TO THE SEPULCHRE

JOHN 20:1-18

A 1 Now on the first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, while it was yet dark, unto the tomb, and seeth the stone taken away from the tomb.

B 2 She runneth therefore, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the tomb, and we know not where they have laid him.

C 3 Peter therefore went forth, and the other disciple, and they went toward the tomb. 4 And they ran both together: and the other disciple outran Peter, and came first to the tomb; 5 and stooping and looking in, he seeth the linen cloths lying; yet entered he not in.

D 6 Simon Peter therefore also cometh, following him, and entered into the tomb; and he beheldeth the linen cloths lying, 7 and the napkin, that was upon his head, not lying with the linen cloths, but rolled up in a place by itself. 8 Then entered in therefore the other disciple also, which came first to the tomb, and he saw, and believed.

E 9 For as yet they knew not the scripture, that he must rise again from the dead. 10 So the disciples went away again unto their own home.

F 11 But Mary was standing without at the tomb weeping; so, as she wept, she stooped and looked into the tomb; 12 and she beheldeth two angels in white sitting, one at the head, and one at the feet, where the body of Jesus had lain. 13 And they say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

G 14 When she had thus said, she turned herself back, and beholdest Jesus standing, and knew not that it was Jesus. 15 Jesus saith unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? whom seek-est thou? She, supposing him to be the gardener, saith unto him, Sir, if thou hast borne him hence, tell me where thou hast laid him, and I will take him away. 16 Jesus saith unto her, Mary. She turneth herself, and saith unto him in Hebrew, Rabboni; which is to say, Master. 17 Jesus saith to her, 'Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended unto the Father: but go unto my brethren, and say to them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and my God and your God. 18 Mary Magdalene cometh and telleth the disciples, I have seen the Lord; and how that he had said these things unto her.

§ 220  WITH THE DISCIPLES IN JERUSALEM

JOHN 20:19-29

A 19 When therefore it was evening, on that day, the first day of the week, and when the doors were shut where the disciples were, for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. 20 And when he had said this, he shewed unto them his hands and his side. The disciples therefore were glad, when they saw the Lord.

ERV margin: 1 Or Teacher 2 Or Take not hold on me

B For other references to the disciple whom Jesus loved, compare § 209 B, § 217 B, § 222 AC, and § 223 A
§ 220

RECORDS OF THE LIFE OF JESUS

Mt-Mk-Lk

B Compare §150 portion E
Compare §151 portion C

C Compare §71 portion F
Compare §78 portion T

John 20

21 Jesus therefore said to them again, Peace be unto you: as the Father hath sent me, even so send I you.

22 And when he had said this, he breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost: whose soever sins ye forgive, they are forgiven unto them; whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained.

24 But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jesus came. 25 The other disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I shall see in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and put my hand into his side, I will not believe.

26 And after eight days again his disciples were within, and Thomas with them. Jesus cometh, the doors being shut, and stood in the midst, and said, Peace be unto you. 27 Then saith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and see my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and put it into my side: and be not faithless, but believing. 28 Thomas answered and said unto him, My Lord and my God. 29 Jesus saith unto him, Because thou hast seen me, thou hast believed: blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

§ 221 PURPOSE OF THE RECORD OF JOHN

John 20:30–31

... many other signs therefore did Jesus in the presence of the disciples, which are not written in this book: 31 but these are written, that ye may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing ye may have life in his name.

§ 222 WITH THE DISCIPLES AT THE SEA OF TIBERIAS

John 21:1–23

1 After these things Jesus manifested himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and he manifested himself on this wise. 2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. 3 Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also come with thee. They went forth, and entered into the boat; and that night they took nothing. 4 But when day was now breaking, Jesus stood on the beach: howbeit the disciples knew not that it was Jesus.

5 Jesus therefore saith unto them, Children, have ye any to eat? They answered him, No. 6 And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the boat, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. 7 That disciple therefore whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. So when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his coat about him (for he was naked), and cast himself into the sea. 8 But the other disciples came in the little boat (for they were not far from the land, but about two hundred cubits off), dragging the net full of fishes. 9 So when they got upon the land, they see a fire of coals there, and a fish laid thereon, and bread. 10 Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now taken. 11 Simon Peter therefore went up, and drew the net to land, full of great fishes, a hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, the net was not rent. 12 Jesus saith unto them, Come and break your fast. And none of the disciples durst inquire of him, Who art thou? knowing that it was the Lord. 13 Jesus cometh, and taketh the

ERV margin:
1 Or Holy Spirit
2 That is Twin
3 Or hast thou believed?
4 Greek a fire of coals
5 Or a fish
6 Or a loaf
7 Or aboard

A For other references to the disciple whom Jesus loved, compare §209 A and §217 B and §219 B

232
John 21

bread, and giveth them, and the fish likewise. 14 This is now the third time that Jesus was manifested to the disciples, after that he was risen from the dead.

B 15 So when they had broken their fast, Jesus saith to Simon Peter, Simon, son of John, whom thou lovest thou me more than these? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Feed my lambs. 16 He saith to him again a second time, Simon, son of John, whom thou lovest thou me? He saith unto him, Yea, Lord; thou knowest that I love thee. He saith unto him, Tend my sheep. 17 He saith unto him the third time, Simon, son of John, whom thou lovest thou me? Peter was grieved because he said unto him the third time, Lovest thou me? And he said unto him, Lord, thou knowest all things; thou knowest that I love thee. Jesus saith unto him, Feed my sheep.

C 18 Verily, verily, I say unto thee, When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself, and walkedst whither thou wouldest: but when thou shalt be old, thou shalt stretch forth thy hands, and another shall gird thee, and carry thee whither thou wouldest not.

19 Now this he spake, signifying by what manner of death he should glorify God. And when he had spoken this, he saith unto him, Follow me. 20 Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; which also leaned back on his breast at the supper, and said, Lord, who is he that betrayeth thee? 21 Peter therefore seeing him saith to Jesus, Lord, and what shall this man do? 22 Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me. 23 This saying therefore went forth among the brethren, that that disciple should not die: yet Jesus said not unto him, that he should not die; but, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee?

§ 223 CONCLUSION OF THE RECORD OF JOHN

John 21:24–25

A 24 This is the disciple which beareth witness of these things, and wrote these things: and we know that his witness is true.

B 25 And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself would not contain the books that should be written.

ERV margin: 3 Or leaf 2 Greek Iounas: called in Matthew 16:17 Jonah 3 4 Loom in these places represents two different Greek words 5 Or pericope 6 Greek and this man, what?

C Compare §222 A and attached references

A Compare §222 A and attached references

IN THE ORDER OF MT-MK-LK

<p>| 11 C | 189 F | 45 Q | 182 B | 71 E | 155 B |
| 17 D | 152 B | 46 E | 211 E | 71 F | 220 C |
| 17 O | 153 C | 47 J | 207 B | 73 A | 206 C |
| 17 P | 154 E | 46 E | 211 E | 74 C | 152 D |
| 17 P | 153 E | 53 B | 188 A | 74 M | 153 B |
| 17 P | 154 A | 53 B | 193 D | 76 A | 184 |
| 17 R | 154 A | 53 B | 195 E | 78 B | 209 D |
| 18 B | 154 B | 54 C | 187 A | 78 D | 161 C |
| 18 B | 154 D | 54 D | 182 F | 78 E | 209 D |
| 18 C | 154 C | 54 H | 172 B | 78 G | 176 B |
| 18 C | 154 D | 54 J | 185 B | 78 G | 208 A |
| 20 G | 156 B | 56 D | 170 D | 78 G | 209 G |
| 21 A | 172 A | 56 E | 213 H | 78 H | 209 D |
| 21 B | 158 | 56 D | 155 B | 78 T | 220 C |
| 22 C | 187 A | 57 A | 211 H | 78 U | 219 E |
| 22 D | 182 F | 57 C | 210 I | 78 U | 210 H |
| 22 H | 172 B | 57 D | 211 K | 78 U | 211 C |
| 23 | 155 A | 57 E | 211 G | 78 U | 211 F |
| 24 A | 158 | 57 G | 209 E | 78 U | 211 Q |
| 24 B | 189 G | 57 NO | 206 C | 83 A | 212 H |
| 24 E | 189 G | 57 P | 176 B | 83 B | 170 D |
| 27 | 155 A | 57 P | 208 A | 83 Q | 176 B |
| 27 | 222 A | 57 P | 209 G | 83 Q | 208 A |
| 28 GH | 174 A | 58 BC | 153 B | 83 Q | 209 G |
| 32 | 105 B | 58 D | 164 | 83 R | 206 E |
| 32 B | 175 A | 60 A | 178 A | 83 T | 213 T |
| 33 | 105 B | 60 B | 178 B | 83 T | 166 B |
| 33 G | 175 C | 60 C | 178 C | 83 T | 182 H |
| 35 B | 183 D | 60 D | 178 D | 83 T | 189 B |
| 35 B | 211 F | 60 F | 178 E | 83 T | 197 D |
| 35 C | 155 B | 60 G | 178 G | 83 T | 209 B |
| 35 C | 156 A | 60 H | 178 H | 83 T | 211 N |
| 36 H | 211 G | 60 I | 178 F | 83 T | 212 B |
| 36 H | 211 H | 60 J | 180 A | 83 T | 212 E |
| 38 H | 209 E | 60 K | 179 B | 83 T | 212 L |
| 38 H | 211 H | 61 A | 180 A | 83 T | 200 A |
| 38 X | 189 G | 61 B | 180 B | 84 | 204 A |
| 39 | 173 B | 61 B | 180 C | 86 C | 188 A |
| 41 E | 153 C | 61 D | 180 D | 86 C | 189 A |
| 41 G | 153 B | 62 A | 180 D | 86 C | 203 E |
| 41 Q | 166 B | 62 A | 180 C | 86 C | 197 G |
| 41 Q | 182 H | 62 A | 180 D | 86 D | 182 B |
| 41 Q | 182 B | 66 A | 194 C | 87 | 211 E |
| 41 Q | 197 D | 67 A | 178 B | 91 I | 210 I |
| 41 Q | 209 N | 67 C | 178 C | 94 A | 209 B |
| 41 Q | 211 N | 67 D | 178 D | 95 A | 206 D |
| 41 Q | 212 B | 67 E | 178 E | 98 | 195 B |
| 41 Q | 212 E | 67 F | 178 G | 102 | 197 B |
| 41 Q | 212 L | 67 H | 178 H | 104 | 206 C |
| 41 Q | 212 L | 67 I | 178 F | 112 | 206 C |
| 42 A | 204 B | 67 J | 180 A | 116 | 206 C |
| 44 | 185 B | 68 A | 182 B | 120 | 214 D |
| 45 C | 188 A | 70 A | 104 C | 120 | 200 D |
| 45 C | 193 D | 71 A | 179 B | 124 | 205 D |
| 45 C | 193 E | 71 C | 153 B | 124 | 205 C |
| 45 C | 197 G | 71 D | 183 C | 124 | 205 A |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>124 G</th>
<th>205 B</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>126 A</td>
<td>159 B</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>126 C</td>
<td>159 C</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>127 D</td>
<td>210 E</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>127 D</td>
<td>211 C</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>127 D</td>
<td>211 F</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>127 D</td>
<td>211 Q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>128 A</td>
<td>159 E</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>130 B</td>
<td>161 B</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>134 G</td>
<td>200 D</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>134 G</td>
<td>211 H</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>134 I</td>
<td>210 I</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>134 J</td>
<td>211 K</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>134 K</td>
<td>211 G</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>135 B</td>
<td>211 K</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>136 S</td>
<td>176 D</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137 A</td>
<td>159 A</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137 A</td>
<td>202 B</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137 A</td>
<td>202 E</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137 B</td>
<td>204 B</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137 C</td>
<td>204 C</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137 D</td>
<td>204 E</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137 F</td>
<td>183 D</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137 F</td>
<td>209 B</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>137 F</td>
<td>209 J</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138 E</td>
<td>183 B</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138 E</td>
<td>209 C</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138 E</td>
<td>209 F</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138 E</td>
<td>209 H</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138 E</td>
<td>209 J</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138 F</td>
<td>183 D</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138 F</td>
<td>209 J</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138 K</td>
<td>209 H</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>138 M</td>
<td>209 D</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139 A</td>
<td>210 K</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139 A</td>
<td>213</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139 B</td>
<td>211 U</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139 C</td>
<td>211 O</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139 C</td>
<td>214 N</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139 C</td>
<td>215 F</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139 C</td>
<td>216 0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>139 C</th>
<th>211 O</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>139 C</td>
<td>214 N</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>139 C</td>
<td>216 0</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<p>| 236 |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>LOCATION OF PASSAGES IN THE RECORDS</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 1</strong>: 1-17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18-25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 2</strong>: 1-12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 3</strong>: 1-12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 4</strong>: 1-11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12-17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18-22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24-25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21-48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 6</strong>: 1-18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 7</strong>: 1-29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9-13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14-17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18-26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36-38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 8</strong>: 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5-13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14-27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18-27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 9</strong>: 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9-13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14-17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18-26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36-38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 11</strong>: 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 12</strong>: 1-8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9-14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15-21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22-45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46-50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 13</strong>: 1-12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23b-33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34-36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 14</strong>: 1-20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21-28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29a</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29b-39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 16</strong>: 1-4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5-12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21-27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24-28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 17</strong>: 1-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14-20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22-23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24-27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 18</strong>: 1-35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>MATT 19</strong>: 1-2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARK 6:12-13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14-29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30-31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32-36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>47-52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>53-56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>57-93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31-36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32-37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>48-53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11-13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14-21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22-26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31-33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34-38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARK 9:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14-29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30-32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33-50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARK 10:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2-12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17-31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35-45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>46-52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARK 11:1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12-14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15-19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20-25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27-33</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARK 12:1-12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35-37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38-40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41-44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21-37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>38-40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41-44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12-25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26-31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32-42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43-52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>53-72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARK 15:1-20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21-41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>42-47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MARK 16:1-8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9-11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19-20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21-39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41-50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUKE 14: 7-24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>----------------</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25-35</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15: 1-32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16: 1-12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19-31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17: 1-6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7-10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11-19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20-37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18: 1-8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9-14</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15-17</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35-43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUKE 19: 1-10</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11-28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29-44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45-48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUKE 20: 1-8</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9-19</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20-40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>41-44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45-47</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUKE 21: 1-4</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5-24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25-38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUKE 22: 1-6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31-38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>39-46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45-53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>54-71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUKE 23: 1-25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26-40</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>50-55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>LUKE 24: 1-12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33-53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 1: 1-18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19-28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35-42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43-51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 2: 1-11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23-25</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 3: 1-12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23-24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31-36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 4: 1-3</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 5: 1-9</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9-18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19-29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 6: 1-13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14-15</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16-21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 7: 1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10-13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14-18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 8: 1-11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 9: 1-12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35-41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 10: 1-21</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22-39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 11: 1-16</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17-44</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>45-53</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 12: 1-11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20-36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36-43</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 13: 1-38</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19-28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35-42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43-51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 14: 1-31</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19-28</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35-42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>43-51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 15: 1-27</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19-29</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31-36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 16: 1-26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31-42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 17: 1-2</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20-18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22-34</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>25-30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31-36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>JOHN 18: 1-23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24-25</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

239